

This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

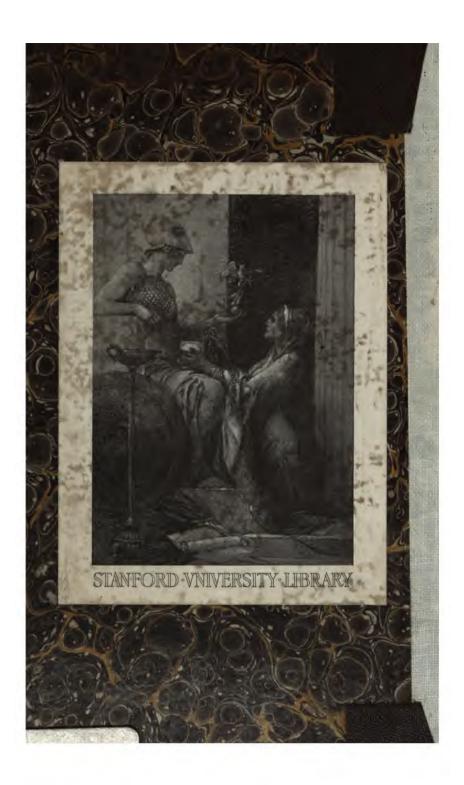
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/

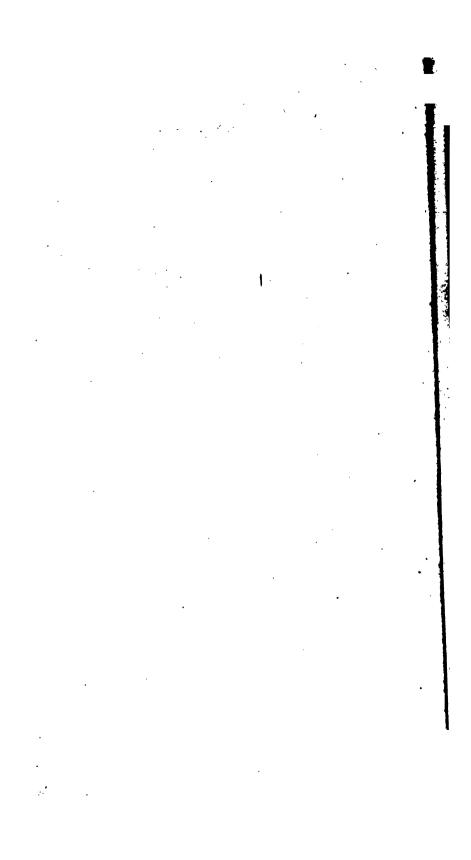






5//- 282.44 G9826

r





Guyon, J. M. (B. dela M.)

THE

EXEMPLARY LIFE

OF THE PIOUS

LADY GUION,

translated from

HER OWN ACCOUNT

IN THE

ORIGINAL FRENCH.

To which is added

A NEW TRANSLATION OF HER

Short and Easy Method of Prayer,

By THOMAS DIGBY BROOKE.

Which Treatise was the first rise of her severe Persecutions.

Wisdom is justified of her Children. Matt. xi. 19

BRISTOL:

Printed by J. Mills, St. Augustine's Back,
FOR DARTON AND HARVEY, GRACECHURH-STREET, LONDON
AND J. MILLS, BRISTOL.
1806.

With what avidity do the young and the thoughtless seek after novels—the amorous and flighty after tales and romances—the warrior after the lives of the Cæsars and Alexanders—the student after Newtons and Platos—and the Christian after Saints and Iloly Souls.

These demonstrate their aim by their pursuit, and give the strongest evidence of the bent of their hearts, by that reading which affords them the most entertainment and delight. A vitiated and sickly appetite can as soon relish plain and wholesome food, as a corrupted heart Pious Lives and Divine Writings.

Here then we plainly perceive the dangerous and deadly tendency of all Works of Fancy and flighty genius.—Not to speak at all of that filthy tribe of lewd, profane, and unprofitable Stuff, that is the detestation of every man of sense, and every woman of virtue.—But those more approved Works, wherein humanity is displayed—sentiments are sweetly refined, and even virtue itself comes forth to claim your respect and applause.—Here—too, too often—if not ever, the deluding or deluded writer, offers to your view a mixed and totally inconsistent Character, a jumble of unnatural and incompatible

of Virtue and imitation, a touchstone of truth; while the poor deceived reader—finding in himself some of the sweet and amiable natural softness, and generous disposition (of the hero he admires, imagines himself necessarily possessed of all the piety and virtue, which the author had ascribed so liberally to his patched up charater,—and thus lulls himself asleep in the delusion of death.

The sacred Scriptures, indeed, give us, above all other writings, faithful and just characters of men—where, if we read of a Saint's turning Sinner, we read also of the just judgment of God upon his crimes, and the bitterness of his repentance.

The lives of pious persons, wrote by themselves, compiled from their own papers, or related by some faithful friend, who gives us mostly their own words, and carefully collects their important sentences—these are the precious Books—the blessed treasures of inestimable worth.—Here we have not only true precept but animating example—and the Soul that thirsts after grace and salvation, has the whole process and progress, by which her fellow-traveller encountered all difficulties, escaped all dangers, and

and overcame all obstacles that poor pilgrims meet with in their journey to life.

God assures us, that he is no respecter of persons—but in every Nation, he that fears him and works righteousness, shall be accepted of him.—Let this divine sentence be our rule and guide, so shall we not greatly err.— For those whom Gop bears with and accepts, let us not dare to judge and reject—What! poor wretched mortals as we are; shall we presume to limit and restrain that mercy, that is over all his works? or how far he shall shower out his graces and gifts upon the creatures of his Workmanship, and the redeemed of his blood?—Shall we utterly despise and cast away all the experience and leadings of a chosen Vessel—because the product of a French soil and foreign clime —Shall we not rather glory, that lillies grow among thorns, and that the true Son of Righteousness can call up and nourish a precious Flower, amidst the weeds of a Wilderness, and the brambles of a Desert.-What, because she was born in a Romish Country, and bred a Papist, shall we exclude her from a place among the great multitude, which no man can number, of all Nations and Kindreds and people and tongues, which stand before the Throne and before the Lamb. (Rev. vii. 9.) The

The principal advantages in the usefulness of this lady's life, above most others, are—First, that the whole is recent; many, even middle aged persons, may yet remember the noise of her persecutions made through Europe.—She was not secluded in a Convent-hid in a Cell-or buried in the Desert -But lived in communion and friendship with her fellow-creatures, without affecting any thing singular or extraordinary.—She had the disadvantages of title and rank, beauty and fortune; and the embarrassments of husband, children, and high relations.— Yet her soul gloriously surmounted all and triumphed over every impediment in her spiritual race.—Be roused by her example, and encouraged by her victory-God is the same God yesterday, to-day and for ever.—What he gave her he may bestow upon thee-go thou and do likewise.



Sames Bentley

THE LIFE

O F

LADY GUIQN.

PART. I. CHAP. I.

being

THE INTRODUCTION,

ADDRESSED BY HER TO HER DIRECTOR.

S you thought there were omissions of importance in the former narration of my wretched and uncommon Life, I willingly comply with your desire, in giving you a more circumstantial relation; though the labour seems rather painful, as I cannot use much study or reflection. My earnest wish is to paint in true colours to your view, the goodness of God to me, and the blackness of my own ingratitude —but this is impossible; numberless little circumstances have escaped my memory, and you are unwilling I should give you a minute account of my sins. I shall however try to leave as few faults as possible, and depend on your assurances,* of keeping it from the public, and of destroying it, when your soul hath drawn those spiritual advantages therefrom, which

God

^{*} As she advances in the work, she seems as if she thought it might be made public.

God intended, and for which purpose I am willing to sacrifice all things, being fully persuaded of his designs towards you, as well for the sanctification of others, as yourself.

But let me assure you, this is not attained, save through pain, weariness, and labour; and a path that will wonderfully disappoint your expectations; however, provided you be fully convinced, that it is on the Nothing in man that God establishes his greatest works, you will be in part guarded against disappointment or surprize. It should seem, as though he destroyed that he might build; for when he is about to rear his sacred temple in us, he first totally razes that vain and pompous edifice, which human art and power had erected, and from its horrible ruins, a new structure is formed, by his power only.

On that you could comprehend the depth of this mystery, and conceive the secrets of the conduct of God, revealed to Babes, but hid from the trise and great of this world, who think themselves the Lord's counsellors, and capable of investigating his procedures, and suppose they have attained that divine wisdom hidden from the eyes of all living, in Self, and in their own works, and kept close from the focks of the air; from those, who by a lively genius and elevated faculties mount up to heaven, and think to comprehend the height and depth and length and breadth of God.

This divine wisdom is unknown, even to those who pass in the world for persons extraordinary in illumination and knowledge. To whom then is she known, and who can tell us any takings concerning her? Description and Data's assure

s, that they have heard with their ears of her Fame and renown. It is then in dying to all things, and in being truly lost to their concerns, to pass on forward into God, and exist only in Him, that we attain to some knowledge of the true wisdom. Oh how little are her ways known, and her dealings with her most chosen servants! Scarce do we discover any thing thereof, but surprised at the dissimilitude betwixt the truth we thus discover, and our former ideas of it, we cry out with St. Paul, Oh the depth of the knowledge and wisdom of God! how unsearchable are his judgments, and his ways past finding He judgeth not of things as men do, who call good evil and evil good, and account that as righteousness which is abominable in his sight, and which according to the Prophet, he regards no more than filthy rags. He will enter into strict judgment with these Self-righteous, and they shall, like the Pharisees, be rather subjects of his wrath, than objects of his love, or inheritors of his rewards; doth not Christ himself assure us, that "except our righteousness exceed that of the Scribes and Pharisees we shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven." And which of us even approach them in righteousness: or if we live in the practice of virtues, though much inferior to theirs, are we not tenfold more ostentatious? who is not pleased to behold himself righteous in his own eyes, and in the eyes of others? or who is it doubts that such righteousness is sufficient to please God? yet we may see the indignation of our Lord, and his fore-runner, manifested against such. He who was the perfect pattern of tenderness and meekness, yet such as flowed from the depth of the heart, and not that affected meekness, which under the form of a dove.

dove, hides the hawk's heart: He appears severe only to these self-righteous, and publicly dishonoured them: in what strange colours does he represent them, while he beholds the poor sinner with mercy, compassion and love, and declares that for them only he was come, that it was the sick who needed the physician; and though the Saviour of Israel, he only came to save the lost Sheep of the House of Israel.

O THOU Source of Love! thou dost indeed seem so jealous of the salvation thou hast purchased, that thou dost prefer the sinner to the righteous! the poor sinner beholds himself vile and wretched, is in a manner constrained to detest himself; and finding his state so horrible, casts himself in his desperation into the arms of his Saviour, and plunges with faith into the sacred bath of his Blood, and comes forth "white as wool:" Then confounded at the review of his disordered state, and overflowing with love for him, who having alone the power, had also the compassion to save him—the excess of his love is proportioned to the enormity of his crimes; and the fulness of gratitude, to the extent of the debt remitted. Whilst the self-righteous relying on the many good works he imagines to have performed, seems to hold salvation in his own hand, and considers Heaven as a just reward of his merits. In the bitterness of zeal he exclaims against all sinners, and represents the gates of mercy as barred to them, and heaven as a place to which they have no pretensions. What need have such self-righteous of a Saviour? they are already burdened with the load of their own merits. Oh how long will they bear the flattering load, whilst sinners divested of every thing,

hing, fly rapidly on the wings of faith and ove into their Saviour's arms, who freely betows on them that which he has infinitely meited.

How full of self-love are the former, and how void of the love of God? they esteem and admire themselves in their works of righteousness, which they suppose the cause of their happiness. These works are no sooner exposed to the Sun of Righteousness, than it discovers all to be so full of impurity and baseness, that it frets them to the heart; meanwhile the poor sinner, Magdalene is pardoned, because she loves much, and her faith and love are accepted as righteousness. The divine Paul who so well understood these great truths, and so fully investigated them, assures us that the faith of Abraham was imputed to him for righteousness! This is truly beautiful: for it is certain all that holy Patriarch's actions were strictly righteous; yet not seeing them as such and being void of the love of them, and divested of selfishness, his faith was founded on the salvation to come by Christ. He hoped in him even against hope itself, and this was imputed to him for righteousness, (Rom. iv. 18, and 22.) a pure, simple and genuine righteousness, merited by Christ, and not a righteousness wrought by himself, and regarded as of himself.

You may imagine this a digression wide of the subject I at first proposed: but it leads insensibly to it, and shews, that God accomplishes his works either in converted sinners, whose past iniquities serve as a counterpoise to their elevation; or in persons whose self-righteousness he destroys, by totally over-throwing the proud building they had reared on a sandy foundation, instead of the Rock, Christ.

THE establishment of all these ends, which he proposed in coming into the world, is effected by the apparent overthrow of that very structure which in reality he would erect: for by means which seem to destroy his church, he establishes it. How strangely does he found the new law and give it a sanction! the very legislator himself is condemned by the learned and great, as a malefactor, and at length dies an ignominious death. Oh that we fully understood how very opposite our self-righteousness is to the designs of God—it would be a subject for endless humiliation, and we should have an utter distrust in that which at present constitutes the whole of our dependance.

This being premised, it will be less difficult for you to conceive the designs of God, in the favours he has conferred on the most miserable of creatures. From a just love of his supreme power, and a righteous jealousy over mankind, who attribute to each other the gifts he himself bestows upon them, it pleased him to take one of the most unworthy of the Creation, to make known that his grace are the effects of his will, not the fruits of our merits; that it is the property of his wisdom, to destroy what is proudly built, and to build what is destroyed, to make use of weak things to confound the mighty, and to employ in his service such as appear vile and contemptible.

This he does in a manner so astonishing, as to render them the objects of the scorn and contempt of the world. It is not to draw the public public approbation upon them, that he makes them instrumental in the salvation of others; but to render them the objects of their dislike, and the subjects of their insults; as you will see in the narrative of the life, you have ordered me to write.

CHAP. II.

I WAS born the 18th of April 1648, my parents, particularly my father, was extremely pious, but to him it was in a manner hereditary, as many of his fore-fathers were Saints.

My mother, in the 8th month was accidently frighted, which caused an abortion, and it is generally imagined that a child born in that month cannot survive; indeed I was so excessively ill, immediately after my birth, that all about me despaired of my life, and were apprehensive I should die without baptism; but perceiving some signs of recovery they ran to acquaint my father, who immediately brought a priest; but on entering the chamber they were told, those symptoms which had raised their hopes were only expiring struggles, and that all were now over.

* If I had then died, I should perhaps have never either known or loved my God, and this heart created only for thyself, without ever having had the blessedness of a single moment's union with thee, had been eternally banished thy sacred presence.—O thou who art the Supreme Felicity! if I now deserve thy hatred, and am hereafter a vessel prepared for perdition, yet still the consolation remains, of my having once known and loved thee: of having once sought and followed thee; and I am also consoled in my willingness, to embrace, through my attachment to thy Divine Justice, the eternal decree it may pronounce against me; for I love thy justice when it deals more rigorously with me than any other. Yea! I am so enamoured with thy Justice, and pure glory, that regardless of myself or my proper interests, I take part with thee against myself, and where thou strikest there will I strike also. And though I should have enjoyed the advantage of never having actually offended thee, had I died at that tender age, yet the pleasure which arises on being sacrificed to thee, through love; together with the blessedness of having once loved thee, far transcends the pain I feel in having since so often displeased thee.

I HAD no sooner shewn signs of life again, than I again relapsed, and remained so long in an uncertain state, that it was some time before they could find a proper opportunity to baptize

Our author here adverts to the opinion commonly received in the Romish church; that children dying without baptism are not saved; from this error however, she takes occasion to break forth, into those refinements of sentiment, which though foolishness to the mere natural man, all real christians cannot but admire.

me, and I continued very unhealthy until I was two years and a half old, when they sent me to the *convent of the *Ursulines*, where I remained a few months.

On my return, my mother neglected to pay due attention to my education. She was not fond of daughters, and abandoned me wholly to the care of servants; and indeed I should have suffered severely from their inattention to me, had not thine all-watchful Providence been my protector; for through the liveliness of my disposition, I met with various accidents, and frequently fell into a deep vault that held our firewood; however, I always escaped unhurt.

THE Dutchess of Montbason came to the Convent of the Benedictines, when I was about four years old. She had a high friendship for my father, and obtained his permission that I should go to the same Convent; for she took peculiar delight in my infant sportiveness, and a certain sweetness in my external deportment, with which God had endowed me: I accordingly became her constant companion.

I FELL into frequent and dangerous disorders in this house, and remember to have committed considerable faults. I here had good examples before me, and being naturally well inclined I quickly followed them, when there was none to turn me aside. I loved to hear God spoken of, to be at church, and dressed in a religious habit. One day I was told of the terrors of hell, which I imagined was merely to intimidate me, as I

Children are educated in many of the French Convents as at our boarding schools.

was exceedingly lively, and full of a little petulant vivacity, which they called wit: the succeeding night I dreamt of hell, and though I was so young, yet time has never since been able to efface the frightful ideas, which were then impressedupon my imagination: All appeared horrible darkness, where souls were punished, and my place amongst them was pointed At this I wept bitterly, and cried. Oh mu God, if thou wilt have mercy upon me, and spare me yet a little longer, I will never offend thee-And thou didst, O Lord, in mercy hearken unto my cry, and pour upon me strength and courage to serve thee, in an uncommon manner for one of my age. I wanted to go privately to confession, but being so little, the mistress of the boarders carried me to the priest, and stayed with me while I was heard singly; but she was much astonished when I came to mention, that I had had suggestions against the faith, and the confessor began to laugh, and enquire what they I told him till then I had doubted there was such a place as hell, and supposed my mistress had spoken of it merely to make me good. but that now my doubts were all removed. After confession my heart glowed with a kind of feryour, and at one time I felt a desire to suffer martyrdom. The good girls of the house, to amuse themselves, and see how far this growing fervour would carry me, desired I should prepare. I found great fervency and delight in prayer on this occasion, and was persuaded that this ardour, which was as new as it was pleasing, was a proof of God's love; and this inspired me with such courage and resolution, that I carnestly besought them to proceed, that I might thereby enter into thy sacred presence. But was there not latent hypocrisy here? did I

not imagine that it was possible they would not kill me, and that I should have the merit of martyrdom without suffering it. Indeed it appeared there was something of this nature in it: for being placed kneeling on a cloth spread for the purpose, and seeing behind me a large sword lifted up, which they had prepared to try how far my ardour would carry me. I cried, hold! it is not right I should die without first obtaining my father's permission. I was quickly upbraided with having said this that I might escape, and that I was no longer a martyr. continued long disconsolate, and would receive no comfort; something inwardly reproved me, for not having embraced that opportunity of going to heaven, when it rested altogether on my own choice.

At my own solicitation, and on account of my falling so frequently sick, I was at length taken home; but not without having met a variety of little crosses, proportioned to my age. On my return, my mother having a maid in whom she placed a confidence, left me again to the care of servants. I must here mention a great fault, of which mothers are guilty, when under pretext of external devotions or other engagements, they suffer their daughters to be absent from them: nor can I forbear condemning that unjust partiality with which parents treat some of their children; it is frequently productive of divisions in families, and even the ruin of some; whereas impartiality, by uniting children's hearts together, lays the foundation of lasting harmony and unanimity.

I WOULD I were able to convince parents, and all who have the care of youth, of the great attention

attention they require, and how dangerous it is to let them be for any length of time from under their own eye, or to suffer them to be without some kind of employment. This negligence is the ruin of almost all females.—How many little Angels would we see, did not idleness and want of due restraint destroy every seed of virtue?

How greatly it is to be lamented, that mothers who are inclined to piety, should pervert the means of salvation into their destruction, and commit the greatest irregularities in pursuing that which should produce the most regular and circumspect conduct.

Thus because they experience certain sweetnesses in prayer, they would be all day long at church; meanwhile their children are running to destruction at home: the means to glorify God most is to prevent what may offend him. What must be the nature of that sacrifice which is the occasion of sin.—God should be served in his own way, not in ours. Let the devotion of mothers be so regulated as to prevent their daughters from straying: they should treat them as sisters, not as slaves, and appear pleased with their little amusements;—thus the children will delight in the presence of their mothers instead of avoiding it; for if they find so much happiness with them, they will not dream of seeking any elsewhere. But mothers frequently deny their children any liberties; therefore like birds constantly confined to a cage, they no sooner find means to escape than off they go, and never more return; whereas in order to render them tame and docile when young, they should be permitted sometimes to take wing; but as their

flight is weak, and closely watched, it is easy to retake them when they escape; and this little flight gives them the habit of naturally returning to their cage, which becomes an agreeable confinement. I believe young girls should be treated in a manner something similar to this; mothers should indulge them in an innocent liberty, but never lose sight of them.

To guard the tender minds of children from what is wrong, much care should be taken to employ them in agreeable and useful matters; they should not be loaded with food they cannot relish; milk suited to babes should be administered to them, and not strong meat. which may so disgust them, that when they arrive at an age wherein it would be proper nourishment, they will not so much as taste it. Every day they should be obliged to read a little in some good book, and spend some time in prayer, which must be suited rather to stir the affections than for meditation. this method of education pursued, how speedily would all disorder cease! these daughters becoming mothers, would educate their children as they themselves had been educated.

PARENTS should also avoid shewing the smallest partiality in the treatment of their children; it begets a secret jealousy and hatred amongst them, which frequently augments with time, and even continues until death. How often do we see some children the idols of the house, behaving like absolute tyrants, and treating their brothers and sisters as so many slaves, according to the examples of father and mother; and it happens many times, that the favourite proves a scourge to the parents, and

for the instruction of youth. This was a singular dispensation, Oh my Lord! of thy providence and love towards me, and proved the first means of my salvation. She loved me tenderly, and her affection made her discover in me many amiable qualities, which thou of thy great goodnesss hadst implanted in me: She endeavoured to improve these good qualities, and I believe that had I continued in such careful hands, I should have acquired as many virtuous habits, as I had afterwards contracted evil ones.

This good sister employed her time in instructing me in piety, and in such branches of learning as were suitable to my age and capacity. She had good talents, and improved them well, was frequently in prayer, and her faith as great and as pure as most. She denied herself every other satisfaction, to be with me, and to instruct me: Nay such was her affection for me, that it made her find, as she told me, more pleasure with me than any where else.

Ir I made her agreeable answers, more from chance than judgement, she thought herself well paid for all her labour. In short, under her care I soon became mistress of most things suitable for me, insomuch that many grown persons, of rank and figure, could not have answered to the things which I did.

As my father often sent for me home to see me, one time I found the Queen of England there. I was then near eight years of age. My father told the Queen's confessor, that if he wanted a little amusement, he might entertain himself with me, and propound some questions

and the several very difficult ---- such pertinent answers, The training Queen, and said to n ust have some diversion Sue also tried me; and was -- lively answers, and my me of my father Torrunity, assuring him that are of me, designing the man of monar to the princess. But my THE THE SECTION OF THE 25 to disoblige her. Doubtwho caused his refusal, and The stroke which might prowas a marcepted my salvation: For being where is I was how should I have withsecurine temptations, and distractions of a Nu: C

I were back to the Ursulines, where my good wer wutinued her affection. But as she was we de matress of the boarders, and as I was morning conclines to go along with them, I mine car bad habits; I became addicted to with the sand indevotion, passing whole mes a thout thinking on God; though he was the sequel will manages that not remain long under the where the vicious habits; for my sister's I loved much to hear of here weary of church, loved to pray, we will so the poor, and a natural diswhose doctrine was judged unand having sucked in with my milk, the And God has always conthe midst of my distillelities.

the end of the garden a little to the child Jesus. To which I betook

I betook myself for devotion; and for some time, carrying my breakfast thither every morning, hid it all behind his image; for I was so much a child, that I thought I made a considerable sacrifice in depriving myself of it. Being also delicate in my choice of food, I wished to mortify myself; but found self-love still too prevalent, to submit to such mortification. After this, when they were cleaning out this chapel, they found behind the image what I had left there, and presently guessed that it was I, as they had seen me every day going thither: And God, who lets nothing pass without a recompence, soon rewarded me for this little infantine devotion.

I CONTINUED some time longer with my sister, where I retained the love and fear of God. My life was easy; I was educated agreeably with her. I improved much in the time I had my health; for very often was I sick, and seized with maladies as sudden as uncommon: In the evening well, and in the morning swelled and full of blueish marks, symptoms of a fever which soon followed. At nine years of age, I was taken with so violent a fit of throwing up blood, that they thought I was going to die: I was rendered exceedingly weak thereby.

A LITTLE before this severe fit, my other sister became jealous, wanting to have me in her turn. Though she led a good life, yet she had not a talent for the education of children. I may say, that was the period of my happiness in this house. At first she caressed me much; but all her carresses made no impression on my heart. My other sister did more with a look, than she with either carressess or threatenings. As she

saw that I loved her not so well as the other. she changed her fondling to rigorous treatment. She would not allow me to speak to my other sister; and when she knew I had spoke to her, she got me whipt, or else beat me herself. could no longer hold out against such severe usage, and therefore requited with ingratitude all the favours of my paternal sister, going no more to see her: Which yet did not hinder her from giving me marks of her usual goodness. in the great malady I mentioned above. kindly construed my ingratitude to be rather owing to my fear of chastisement, than to a bad heart. Indeed I believe this was the only instance in which fear of chastisement operated so very powerfully upon me, for from that time I was naturally led to suffer more in occasioning pain to one I loved, than in suffering myself at their hand. Thou knowest Oh my Beloved! that it was not the dread of thy chastisements that sunk deep, either on my understanding or my heart; it was the sorrow for offending thee, which ever constituted the whole of my distress, and it was such that I imagine, though there were neither heaven or hell, I should always have retained the same fear of displeasing thee. Thou knowest that after my faults, when in forgiving mercy thou wert pleased to visit my soul, thy caresses were a thousand fold more insupportable than thy rod.

My father being informed of all that passed, took me home again. I was at that time near ten years of age. I stayed only a little while at home; for a nun of the order of St. Dominic, of a great family, and one of my father's intimate friends, solicited him to place me in her convent, of which she was the prioress, promis-

ing she would take care of me herself, and make me lodge in her own chamber; for this lady had conceived a great affection for me. she was so much taken up with her community. in which many troublesome affairs fell out, that she was not at liberty to take much care of me. Here I had the chicken-pox, which made me keep my bed three weeks, in which I had very bad attendance, though my father and mother thought I was under excellent care. The ladies of the house had such a dread of the small-pox. as they imagined mine to be, that they durst not come near me. I passed almost all the time without seeing any body but a lay-sister, who only brought me my allowance of diet at the set hours, and then immediately went off I providentially found a bible in my chamber, and having both a fondness for reading and a happy memory, I spent whole days in reading it from morning to night, and learned entirely the historical part. Yet I was really very unhappy in this house: For the other boarders, being big girls, plagued me with very grievous persecutions. I was so much neglected as to meat and drink, that I fell away, and became quite emaciated. Several other crosses I had, which were hard enough for me to bear.

CHAP. IV.

A FTER having been hereabout eight months. my father took me home again. My mother kept me more with her, beginning now to have a higher regard for me than before; yet she still preferred my brother, which was so visible that every one spoke of it with dislike; for when I was sick, and met with any thing I liked, he demanded it; it was then taken from me, and given to him, though he was perfectly well in health. He was continually giving me new vexations. One day he made me mount up on top of the coach; when he had done that he threw me down on the ground; and by the fall I was bruised. At other times he beat me: But whatever he did, however wrong, winked at, or had the most favorable construction put upon it. This conduct soured my temper: I had little disposition to do good, saving, "I was never the better for it." It was not then for thee alone, oh God, that I did good; since I ceased to do it, when it met not with such a reception from others as I wanted. Had I known how to make a right use of this thy crucifying conduct towards me, I should have made a good progress. Far from turning me out of the way, it would have made me turn more whelly to thee. With jealous eyes I looked on my brother, seeing the wide difference made betwixt him and me. Whatever he did. he always did well; but the blame of all fell My sisters by the mother made their court to her, by caressing him, and falling foul on me. It is true, I was bad: I was relapsed into my former faults of lying and peevishness. With

me,

With all these faults, I was very tender and charitable to the poor, prayed to God assiduously, loved to hear any speak of him, and to read good books.

I MAKE no doubt, sir, that you will be amazed at such a series of inconsistencies: but what succeeds, will surprize you yet more, when you see this manner of acting gain ground with my years, and that as my reason ripened it was so far from correcting such irrational conduct, that sin grew more powerful in me. O my God, thy grace seemed to be redoubled in proportion to the increase of my ingratitude. It was with me as with a city besieged, thou didst surround my heart, and I only studied how to defend myself against thine attacks, I raised fortifications about the wretched place, adding every day to the number of mine iniquities, to prevent thy taking it. And when there was an appearance of thy becoming victorious, over this ungrateful heart, I raised a counter-battery, and threw up ramparts to keep off thy goodness, and to hinder the course of thy grace: none other could have conquered than thyself. Oh my Divine Love! whose sacred fire, was stronger than that state of death, into which sin had so often reduced me.

I CANNOT bear to have it said, "We are not free to resist grace." I have made too long and fatal an experience of my liberty. I closed up all the avenues of my heart, that I might not so much as hear that secret voice of God, which was calling me to himself. I have indeed from my tenderest youth, passed through a series of grievances, either by maladies or by persecutions. The girl to whose care my mother left

me, in dressing my head used to beat me, and did not make me turn it but with rage and Every thing seemed in concert to punish me, but this instead of making me turn unto thee, Oh my God! only served to afflict and embitter my mind. My father knew nothing of all this; for his love to me was such that he would not have suffered it. him much, but at the same time I feared him. so that I told him nothing of it. My mother was often teazing him with complaints of me. to which he made no other reply than, "There are twelve hours in the day; she'll grow wiser." This rigorous proceeding was not the worst for my soul, though it soured my temper, which was otherwise very mild and easy. But what caused my greatest hurt was, that not being able to endure those who treated me ill, I chose to be among those who caressed me, in order to corrupt and spoil me.

My father, seeing I was now grown pretty tall, placed me in Lent among the Ursulines, to receive my first communion at *Easter*, at which time I was to complete my eleventh year. here my most dear sister under whose inspection my father placed me, redoubled her cares, to cause me to make the best preparation poswhile for this act of devotion. I thought now of giving myself to God in good earnest. often felt acombat between my good inclinations and my bud habits. I even did some penances. As I was almost always with my sister, and as the bounders in her class, which was the first; were very reasonable and civil, I became such also, while among them. It had been murder in columnte me hadly; for my very nature was attengty disposed to goodness, and I loved every thing

thing that tended thereto. Easily won with mildness, I did with pleasure whatever my good sister desired. At length Easter arrived, and I received the communion (which was preceded by a general confession) with much joy and devotion. And in this house I stayed till Whitsuntide. But as my other sister was mistress of the second class, she demanded me in her week. to be with her in that class. Her manners, so opposite to the other's, made me relax my former piety. I felt no more that new and delightful ardour which had seized my heart at my first communion. Alas! it held but a short time; for my faults and failings were soon reiterated, and drew me off from the care and duties of religion.

As I now grew very tall for my age, and more to my mother's liking than before, she took care to deck and dress me out, to make me see company, and to take me abroad with her. She took an inordinate pride in that beauty with which God had formed me, only to bless and praise him, which was however perverted by me into a source of pride and vanity. Several suitors offered to me. But as I was not yet twelve years of age, my father would not listen to any proposals. I loved reading much, and shut myself up alone every day to read without interruption.

What proved effectual to gain me over entirely to God, at least for a time, was that a nephew of my father's passed by our house, going on a mission to Cochinchina. I happened at that time to be gone a walking with my companions, which I seldom did. At my return he was gone. They gave me an account of his sanctity

sanctity, and the things he had said. I was so touched therewith, that I was overcome with sorrow. I cried all the rest of the day and of the night. Early in the morning, I went in great distress to seek my confessor. I said to him, "What my father, am I the only person "in our family to be lost? Alas! help me in "my salvation." He was greatly surprised to see me so much afflicted, and comforted me in the best manner he could, not thinking me so bad as I was; for in the midst of my backslidings I was docile, punctual in obedience, careful to confess often; and since I went to him my life was more regular. Oh thou God of love, how often hast thou knocked at the door of my heart! how often terrified me with appearances of sudden death! Yet all these only made a transient impression. I presently returned again to my infidelities; but this time thou didst take, and I may say quite carried off my heart. Alas, what grief I now sustained for having displeased thee! what regrets, what exclamations, what sobbings! Who would have thought, to see me, but that my conversion would have lasted as long as my life? Why didst thou not, Oh my God, utterly take this heart to thyself, when I gave it to thee so fully; or if thou didst take it then, oh why didst thou let it revolt again afterward? Thou wast surely strong enough to hold it, but thou would'st perhaps, in leaving me to myself display thy increy, that the depth of my iniquity might serve as a trophy to thy goodness.

I immediately applied myself to every part of my duty. I made a general confession with great compunction of heart. I frankly confessed all that I knew with torrents of tears. I became

I became so changed that I was scarce to be Acnown. I would not for ever so much have anade the least voluntary slip? and they found any matter for absolution when I confessed. adiscovered the very smallest faults: And God did me the favour to enable me to conquer myself in many things. There were left only some emains of passion, which gave me some trouble to conquer: But as soon as I had by means thereof, given any displeasure, even to the domestics, I begged their pardon, in order to subdue at the same time, my wrath and pride; for wrath is the daughter of pride. A person truly humbled suffers not any thing to put him in a rage. As it is pride which dies the last in the soul, so it is passion which is last destroyed in the outward conduct. A soul thoroughly annihilated, or dead to itself, finds nothing of rage left.

THERE are persons who, being very much filled with the unction of grace, and with a tranquil peace, at their entrance of the resigned path of light and love, think they are come thus far: But they are greatly mistaken. This they will readily discover, if they are heartily willing to examine two things; first if their nature is lively, warm and violent, (for I speak not of stupid tempers) they will find from time to time, that they make slips, in which trouble and emotion have some share; and which even then are useful to humble and annihiliate them. (But when annihilation is perfected all passion is gone, for it is incompatible with the state.) Moreover they will find that there often rises in them certain motions of anger, but the sweetness of grace holds them back by a secret violence: They would easily transgress, if in any wise · wise they gave way to these motions: There are persons who think themselves very mild, because nothing thwarts them: It is not of such that I am speaking; for the mildness, which has never been put to the proof, is often only counterfeit. Those persons who when unmolested appeared saints, are no sooner exercised by vexing occurrences, than there starts up in them a strange number of faults, which they had thought to be dead; and which only lay dormant, because nothing awaked them.

l followed my religious exercises. my self up all the day to read and to pray. I gave all I had to the poor, taking even linen to their houses to make them necessaries. I taught them the catechism; and when my parents dured abroad, I made them eat with me, and actived them with great respect. I read the works of St. Francis de Sales and the life of Mudum de Chantal. There I first learnt what mental prayer was, and I besought my confessor to teach me that kind of prayer, but as he did mat, I used my own endeavours to practise it though without success, as I then thought, beyang I could not then exercise the imagination, and persuaded myself, that that prayer made without forming to one's at it epitatu ideas and reasoning much. thin ally gave me no small trouble, and that ten a leng time. I was nevertheless very assiduin therein, and prayed earnestly to God to with me the gift of prayer. All that I saw writ in the life of M. de Chantal charmed me; and I was see increase hild that I thought I ought to do the thing that I saw in it. 'All the vows . It is made I made also, as that of ever aimthe at the highest perfection, and of doing the

eading that she had put the name of Jesus on eading that she had put the name of Jesus on er heart, to follow the counsel of the spouse. Set me as a seal upon thy heart," and that for this purpose, she had taken a red hot iron, whereupon the holy name was engraven, I was very much afflicted that I could not do the same. I took it in my head to write that sacred and adorable name, in large characters, on a piece of paper. With ribbands and a big needle I fastened it to my skin in four places; and in that position it continued a long time.

AFTER this, I turned all my thoughts to be**come a nun, very often going to the visitation;** for the love which I had for St. Francis de Sales did not permit me to think of any other community than this of which he was the founder. I frequently went to beg the nuns there to receive me into their convent. Often I stole out of my father's house to go thither, and repeatedly solicited them to consent to my admis-But, though it was what they eagerly desired, even as a temporal advantage; yet they never durst let me enter their house, as they very much feared my father, whose fondness for me they were no strangers to. There was then at that house a niece of my father's, to whom I am under great obligations. had not been very favourable to her father, and had thereby reduced her in some sort to depend on mine, to whom she discovered my inclination; who, though he would not for any thing in the world have hindered a right vocation, yet could not hear of my design without shed-But as he happened at this time to ding tears. be abroad, my cousin went to my confessor, to desire him to forbid my going to the visitation.

He durst not however do it plainly, for fear of drawing on himself the resentment of that community; for they already looked on me as their's. Yet still I wanted to be a nun, and importuned my mother excessively to take me to that house; but she would not do it, for fear of grieving my father, who was yet absent, and she still referred me to his return. saw that I could not obtain from her what I desired. I counterfeited her hand writing, and forged a letter in which she besought those ladies to receive me; excusing herself from coming with me on account of her illness: But the prioress, who was a relation of my mother's, and well acquainted with her hand, at once detected the forgery.

CHAP. V.

NO sooner was my father returned home, than he fell into a violent distemper. My mother was at the same time indisposed in another part of the house. I was then all alone with him, ready to render him every kind of service I was capable of, and to give him all the dutiful marks of a most sincere affection: And I do not doubt but my assiduity was very agreeable to him. I went unperceived by him,

empty his basons; taking the time for it when the servants were not at hand; as well to nortify myself as to pay due honor to what JESUS CHRIST said, that he came not to be mimistered to but to minister. When he made me read by him, I read with such heartfelt devotion that he was surprised at it. I remembered the instructions my sister had given me, and the ejaculatory prayers and praises I had learned from her. She had taught me to praise thee, oh my Goo, in all thy works. All that I saw called upon me to render thee that homage. If it rained, I wished every drop to be changed into love and praises. My heart was nourished insensibly with thy love; and my spirit was Incessantly engrossed with the remembrance of thee. I seemed to join and partake in all the good that was done in the world, and could have wished to have the united hearts of all men to love thee. This habit rooted itself so strongly in me, that I retained it throughout my greatest wanderings.

My cousin aforementioned helped not a little to support me in these good sentiments: for I was often with her, and loved her, as she took great care of me, and treated me with much gentleness. Her fortune being equal neither to her birth, nor her virtue, she did with charity and affection what her condition obliged her to. My mother grew jealous, fearing I should love my cousin too well, and herself too little. She who had left me in my young years to the care of her maids, and since that to my own, only enquiring if I was in the house, and troubling herself no further, now required me always to stay with her, and never suffered me to be with my cousin, but with very great reluctance. My

My cousin fell ill; she took that occasion to send her home, which was a severe stroke to my heart, as well as to that grace which began to dawn in me.

Though my mother acted thus she was a very virtuous woman. But God permitted it for my exercise. She was one of the most charitable women of her age. She not only gave away the surplus, but even thenecessaries of the house. Never were the needy neglected by her. Never any wretch came to her without succour. She furnished poor mechanics wherewith to carry on their work, and needy tradesmen wherewith to supply their shops. From her I think I inherited my charity and love for the poor: For Gop favoured me with the blessing of being her successor in that holy exercise. There was not one in the town, or its environs, who did not praise her for this great virtue. She has sometimes given to the last pistole in the house, though she had so large a family to maintain, and yet did not fail in her faith.

My mother's only care about me, had been all along to have me in the house; which indeed is one material point for a girl. And this habit, of being so constantly kept within, proved of great service to me after my marriage, as I shall tell in its due course. It would have been better had she kept me more in her own apartment, with an agreeable freedom; and enquired oftner what part of the house I was in.

AFTER my cousin left me I continued for some time in those sentiments of piety I have mentioned. And God granted me the grace to forgive injuries with such readiness, that my confessor

onfessor was surprised; as he knew that some oung ladies had, out of envy, traduced me; and that I spoke well of them as occasion offered. I was seized with a tertian ague, which lasted four months, in which I suffered much; et during the time, was enabled to suffer with much resignation and patience. In this frame of mind and manner of life I persevered so long as I continued the practice of mental prayer.

NEAR a twelvemonth after, we went to pass some days in the country. My father took along with us one of his relations, a very accomplished young gentleman. He had a great desire to marry me; but my father, who had resolved not to give me to any near kinsman, on account of the difficulty of obtaining dispensations, put him off, without alledging any false or frivolous reasons for it. As this young gentleman was very devout, and every day said the office of the Virgin, I said it with him; and to have time for it, left off prayer, which was to me the first inlet of evils. Yet I kept up for a long time, some share of the spirit of piety; for I went to seek out the little shepherdesses, to instruct them in their religious duties; yet this spirit gradually decayed, not being nourished by prayer. Hereby I became cold toward GoD: All my old faults revived; to which I added an excessive vanity. The love I began to have for myself, extinguished what remained in me of the love of Gop.

I DID not wholly leave off mental prayer, without asking my confessor's leave; I told him I thought it better to say the office of the virgin every day than to practise prayer; as I had not time for both. I saw not that this was a stratagem

a stratagem of the enemy to draw me from tion, and to entangle me insensibly in the snares he had inde for me; in truth I had time sufficient for both, as I had no other occupations than what I prescribed to myself. My confessor was easy in the matter; not being a man of mayor, he gave his consent, to my great hurt.

On my God it the value of prayer were but commended great advantage which accrues to on conversing with thee, and what value of it is of to salvation, every one regarded assistances in it. It is a strong hold inwhich the enemy cannot enter. He may heriege it, make a noise about its ..., me while we are faithful, and hold our It is alike requisite in hildren the necessity of prayer as with atton; but alas! unhappily, it is was sufficient to tell them that there is a that they must endeavour to ... a much and attain the former; and yet The only way to heaven is which every one ... und not of reasonings which are of univ, or exercise of the imaginagrea. . . . willing the mind with wandering tell pass with it; and instead of warmter ha win love to God, leave it cold with an let the poor come, let the what pa kuowledge, let the dull or AFTER ----- retain nothing come to some time and they shall become mentioned. and rich, Have ye not forgive injur what is proper for is destructive? Love

the

the sovereign good, hate all evil, and ye will be truly wise. When ye love any one, is it because ye know the reasons of love and its definitions? No, certainly; Ye love because your heart is formed to love what it finds amiable. And surely ye cannot but know that there is nought lovely in the universe but God: Know ye not that he has created you, that he has died for you: But if these reasons are not sufficient which of you has not some necessity, some trouble, or some misfortune? Which of you does not know how to tell his malady, and beg relief? Come then to this Fountain of all Good, without complaining to weak and impotent creatures, who cannot help you; come to prayer; lay before God your troubles, beg his grace, and above all that you may love him. None can exempt himself from loving; for none can live without a heart, nor the heart without

Why should any amuse themselves, in seeking reasons for loving Love itself; Let us love without reasoning about it; and we shall find ourselves filled with love, before the others have learned the reasons which induce to it. trial of this love, and you will be wiser in it than the most skilful philosophers. In love, as in every thing else, experience instructs better than reasoning. Oh come then drink at this fountain of living waters, instead of the broken cisterns of the Creature, which far from allaying your thirst, only tends continually to augment it. Did ye once drink at this fountain, ye would not seek elsewhere for any thing to quench your thirst; for while ye still continue to draw from this source, ye would thirst no longer after the world; But if ye quit it, alas! the

the enemy has the ascendant; he will give you of his poisoned draughts, which may have an apparent sweetness, but will assuredly rob you of life.

Thus I forsook the fountain of living water when I left off prayer. I became as a vineyard exposed to pillage, whose hedges torn down give liberty to all the passengers to ravage it began to seek in the creature what I had found in God. He left me to myself, because I first left him; and it was his will by permitting me to sink into the horrible pit, to make me feel the necessity I was in of approaching him in Thou hast said, that thou wilt deprayer. stroy those adulterous souls who depart from Alas! it is their departure alone which causes their destruction, since in departing from thee, Oh Sun of Righteousness, they enter into the regions of darkness and the coldness of death, from whence they would never rise, if thou didst not revisit them; if thou didst not by thy divine light, illuminate their darkness, and by thy enlivening warmth, melt their icy hearts, and restore them to life.

I FELL then into the greatest of all misfortunes; for I wandered yet further and further from thee, Oh my God, and thou didst gradually retire from a heart which had quitted thee. Yet such is thy goodness, that it seemed as if thou hadst left me with regret; and when this heart was desirous to return again unto thee, with what speed didst thou come to meet it. This proof of thy love and mercy, shall be to me an everlasting testimony of thy goodness and of my own ingratitude.

I BECAME still more passionate than I had ever been, as age gave more force to nature. I was frequently guilty of lying; I felt my heart corrupt and vain; the spark of divine grace was almost extinguished in me, and I fell into a state of indifference and indevotion; though I still carefully kept up outside appearances; and the habit I had acquired of behaving at church, made me appear better than I was. Vanity, which had been excluded my heart, now resumed its seat. I began to pass a great part of my time before a looking-glass. I found so much pleasure in viewing myself therein, that I thought others were in the right who practised the same. Instead of making use of this exterior, which Gop had given me, that I might love him the more, it became to me only the means of a vain complacency. All seemed to me to look beautiful in my person, but I saw not that it covered a polluted soul .- This rendered me so inwardly vain, that I doubt whether any ever exceeded me therein, but there was an affected modesty in my outward deportment that would have deceived the world.

The high esteem I had for myself made me find faults in every one else of my own sex. I had no eyes but to see my own good qualities, and to discover the defects of others. I hid my own faults from myself, or if I remarked any, yet to me they appeared little in comparison of others. I excused, and even figured them to myself as perfections. Every idea I had of others and of myself was false. I loved reading to such excess, particularly romances, that I spent whole days and nights at them; sometimes the day broke whilst I continued to read, insomuch, that for a length of time I almost

MISERABLE as the condition was to which I was reduced by my infidelities, and the little succour I had from my confesson, I did not fail to say my vocal prayers every day, to confess pretty often, and to communicate almost every fortnight. Sometimes I went to church to weep, and to pray to the blessed virgin to obtain my conversion. I loved to hear any one speak of God, and would never tire with the conversation. When my father spoke of him, I was transported with joy; and when he and my mother went on any pilgrimage, and were to set off very early in the morning, I either did not go to bed the night before, or hired the girls to wake me timely. My father's conversation at such times was always of divine matters, which afforded me the highest delight, and I preferred that subject to any other. I also loved the poor, and was charitable, even whilst I was so very faulty as I have described. How strange may this seem to some, and how hard to reconcile things so very opposite.!*

CHAP. VI.

Now blooming in youth, extolled for her beauty, admired of some, and envied of others, she becomes exposed (but for a short space) to the snares of the world, and of her own vanity co-operating with them.

Soon, ah soon! she finds herself stopt in her career, snatched in her bloom, and involved in the miseries of a matrimonial state, not of her own choice, but imposed on her by that of her parents.

We are now about entering a chapter, the perusal of which may even strike the obdurate and insensible with some feelings of compassion for her early and sudden change; no longer at liberty to range in life, and look around it, in order to make a choice of what might be agreeable to her; instead of that, chained down under ceaseless oppressions, without

^{*} HAVING speedily passed over her childish years, chequered with the dangers incident to that age, in respect both of her person and her morals, her scene of life begins to appear more interesting.

CHAP. VI.

FTERWARDS we came to Paris, where my vanity increased. No cost was spared to make me appear to advantage. I was forward enough to shew myself and expose my pride, in making a parade of this vain beauty, wanting to be loved of every one and to love none. veral apparently advantageous offers of marriage were made for me; but God, unwilling to have me lost, did not permit matters to succeed. My father still found difficulties, which my all-wise Creator raised for my salvation; for had I married any of these persons, I should have been much exposed, and my vanity would have had means of extending itself in a wider circle.

THERE was one person who had asked for me in marriage for several years, whom my father, for family reasons, had always refused. His manners were opposite to my vanity. Nevertheless, a fear lest I should leave this country, together with the affluent circumstances of this gentleman, induced my father, in spite of both his

hope of freedom, where every thing was perpetually dark,

sour and grating.

HER troubles indeed through the goodness of God to her. took the best turn, as they induced her to have recourse to him for his assistance to bear her hard lot : and to discharge every duty requisite in it : Yet, certainly cruel is the conduct of parents, who, from sordid views, force their children for life into what is so opposite to their peace. Though the Father of Mercies often sanctifies troubles, yet he approves not our doing evil that good may come of it, or, committing sin that grace may abound.

his own and my mother's reluctance, to promise me to him; which was done without consulting me. They made me sign the marriage articles without letting me know what they were; though I was well pleased with the thoughts of marriage, flattering myself with a hope of being thereby set at full liberty, and delivered from the ill treatment of my mother, which I drew upon myself by my want of docility: Yet God ordered it far otherwise; and the condition which I found myself in afterwards, frustrated my hopes; as I shall shew in the sequel.

How pleasing soever marriage was to my thoughts, I was all the time, after my being promised, and even long after my marriage, in extreme confusion, which arose from two causes: The first was my natural modesty, which I did not lose. I had much reserve towards men. The other was my vanity; for though the husband provided was a more advantageous match than I merited, yet I did not think him such: And the figure which the others made, who had offered to me before, was vastly more engaging. Their rank would have placed me in view: And as I consulted, in these things, nothing but my vanity, whatever did not flatter that, was to me insupportable; yet even this very vanity was I think of some advantage to me; for it hindered me from falling into such things as cause the ruin of families. I would not do any thing which in the eye of the world, might render me culpable; so strictly did I guard my exterior conduct. As I was modest at church, and had not been used to go abroad without my mother, and as the reputation of our house was great, I passed for virtuous.

I DID not see my spouse elect (at Paris) till two or three days before our marriage. I caused masses to be said all the time after my being contracted, to know the will of GoD; wishing to do it in this affair at least. Oh goodness of my GoD, to bear with me at this time, and to allow me to pray to thee, with as much boldness, as if I had been one of thy friends, I who had rebelled against thee as thy greatest enemy.

THE joy of our nuptials was universal through our village: Amidst this general rejoicing, there appeared none sad but myself. I could neither laugh as others did, nor even eat; so much was I depressed, though as yet I knew not the cause: But it was a foretaste which God gave me of what was to befal me. The remembrance of the desire I had of being a nun, came pouring in upon me. All who came to compliment me, the day after, could not forbear rallying me, because I wept bitterly. I answered them; "Alas! "I had desired so much to be a nun; why then "am I now married? And by what fatality has "such arevolution befallen me?" No sooner was I at the house of my new spouse, than I perceived that it would be for me a house of mourning.

I was obliged here to change my conduct; for their manner of living was very different from that in my father's house. My mother-in-law who had long been a widow, regarded nothing else but œconomy; whereas at my father's house they lived in a noble manner, and great elegance; and what my husband and mother-in-law called pride, and I called politeness, was observed there. I was very much surprized at this change, and so much the more,

as my vanity wished to increase, rather than to be diminished.

At the time of my marriage I was a little past fifteen years of age. My surprize increased greatly, when I saw I must lose what I had acquired with so much application. At my father's house we were obliged to behave in a genteel way, and to speak with propriety. There all that I said was applauded. Here they never hearkened to me, but to contradict and find fault. If I spoke well, they said it was to give them a lesson: If any questions were started at my father's, he encouraged me to speak freely on such occasions:, here if I spoke my sentiments, they said it was to enter into a dispute. They put me to silence in an abrupt and shameful manner, and scolded me from morning till night.

I SHOULD have some difficulty to give you an account of such matters, which cannot be done without wounding charity, if you had not forbidden me to omit any one article, and if you had not positively enjoined me to lay open every thing, and to write down all the particulars. But I request before you proceed, not to look at things on the side of the creature, which would make these persons appear worse than they were; for my mother-in-law had virtue, my husband had religion, and not any vice. It is requisite to look at every thing on the side of God, who permitted these things, only for my salvation, and because he would not have me lost. I had beside so much pride, that had I received any other treatment, I should have continued therein, and should not perhaps, have turned to God, as I was afterwards induced to do, by the oppression of a multitude of Crosses.

To return to my subject, my mother-in-law conceived such a desire to oppose me in every thing, that, in order to vex me, she made me perform the most humiliating offices; for her humour was so extraordinary, having never surmounted it in her youth, that she could hardly live with any body. Saying no other than vocal prayers, she did not see this kind of fault; or, seeing it, and not drawing forces from the spirit of prayer, she could not get the better of it: And it was a pity; for she had both sense and merit. I was then made the victim of her humours. All her occupation was to thwart me continually, and she inspired the like sentiments into her son. They would make persons far my inferiors, take place above My mother who had a high sense of honour, could not endure that: And when she heard of it from others (for I told her nothing of it) she chid me, thinking I did it, not knowing how to keep my rank; and that I had no spirit; and upbraided me with many other things of that sort. I durst not tell her how it was with me; but I was almost ready to die with the agonies of grief and continual vexation. And what aggravated them all, was the remembrance of the persons who had proposed for me, the difference of their humour and manners, the love they had for me, with their agreeableness and politeness. All this made my present situation very doleful, and my burthen intolerable. My mother-in-law upbraided me in regard to my family, and spoke to me incessantly to the disadvantage of my father and mother. I never went to see them, but I had some bitter speeches to bear at my return.

On the other hand my mother complained,

that I did not come often enough to see her. She said I did not love her, that I was alienated from my own family, by being too much attached to my husband; so that I had a great deal of heavy sufferings to undergo on both sides.

What still further augmented my crosses was, that my mother related to my mother-in-law the pains I had cost her from my infancy: After which they reproached me, saying, I was a changeling and an evil Spirit. My husband obliged me to stay all the day long in my mother-in-law's room, without any liberty of retiring into my own apartment, so that I had not a moment's respite to breathe a little. She spoke disadvantageously of me to every body. to lessen the affection and esteem which some had entertained for me, and galled me with the grossest affronts before the finest company. This had not the effect she wanted; for the more patiently they saw me bear it, the higher esteem they had for me.

INDEED, she found the secret of extinguishing my vivacity, and rendering me stupid; so that some of my former acquaintance hardly knew me. Those who had not seen me before, said, "Is this the person famed for such "abundance of wit? She can't say two words. "She is a fine picture." I was not yet sixteen years old. I was so much intimidated, that I durst not go out without my mother-in-law, and in her presence I could not speak. I knew not what I said; so much fear had I of putting her out of humour, and drawing some bitter speech on myself.

To compleat my affliction, they presented me with a waiting maid who was every thing with them. She kept me in sight like a governess, and treated me in a strange manner. For the most part I bore with patience these evils which I had no way to avoid: But sometimes I let some hasty answer escape me, which was a source of grievous crosses to me, and violent reproaches, for a long time together. When I went out, the footmen had orders to give an account of every thing I did. It was then I began to eat the bread of sorrows, and to mingle my drink with my tears. At table they still did something to me, which covered me with confusion. I could not forbear tears, and thence had a double confusion, one for what they said to me, and the other for not being able to refrain weeping. I had no one to confide in who might share my affliction, and to assist me to bear it. When I would impart some hint of it to my mother, I drew upon myself new crosses. so that I resolved to have no confidant of my trouble. It was not from any natural cruelty that my husband treated me thus; for he loved me even passionately, but he was warm and hasty, and my mother-in-law continually irritated him about me.

It was in a condition so deplorable, Oh my God, that I began to perceive the need I had of thy assistance: For this situation was very perilous for me, as I met with none but admirers abroad, and such as flattered me to my hurt, it were to be feared, lest at such a tender age, amidst all the strange domestic crosses I had to bear, I might be seduced. But thou by thy goodness and love gave it quite another turn. By these redoubled strokes thou didst draw me to thyself, and by thy crosses effected what

thy carresses could not effect. Nay even then thou madest use of my natural pride, to keep me within the limits of my duty. I knew that a woman of honour ought never to give suspicion to her husband. I was so very circumspect on that head, that I often carried it even to excess, so far as to refuse the hand to such as in politeness offered me theirs. There happened to me an adventure which, by carrying my prudence too far, had like to have ruined me; for things were taken contrary to their intent: But my husband was sensible of my innocence, and the falsehood of the insinuations of my mother-in-law.

Such weighty crosses, made me return to God. I began to deplore the sins of my youth; for since my marriage I had not committed any voluntarily: Yet I still had some sentiments of vanity remaining, which I wished not to However my troubles now counterbalanced them. Moreover many of them appeared just to the little light I then had; for I was not then illuminated to penetrate the essence of vanity: I fixed my thoughts only on its appearance. I tried to amend my life by penance, and by a general confession, the most exact that I ever yet had made. I quitted all my romances, for which I lately had such a fondness. Though some time before my marriage, it had been damped by reading the gospel, I was so affected therewith, and discovered that character of truth therein, as to put me out of conceit with all the other books. They appeared then to me only full of lies and deceit. I now put away even indifferent books, to have none but such as were profitable. sumed the practice of prayer, and endeavoured

to offend my God no more. I felt his love gradually recover the ascendant in my heart, and banish every other. Yet I had still an intolerable vanity, and self-complacency, which has been my most grievous and obstinate sin.

My crosses redoubled every day. What rendered them more painful was, that my mother-in-law, not content with the bitterest speeches, which she uttered against me, both in public and private. She would break out in a passion about the smallest trifles, and scarcely be pacified for a fortnight together. I passed part of my time in bewailing myself when I could be alone: And my grief became every day more bitter. Sometimes I could not contain myself, when I saw girls, who were my domesticks, and owed me submission, treat me so ill. Nevertheless I did what I could to subdue my temper, which has cost me not a little.

Such stunning blows so impaired the vivacity of my nature, that I became like a lamb that is shearing. I prayed to our LORD to assist me, and he was my refuge. As my age differed from theirs (for my husband was twenty two years older than I) I saw well there was no probability of changing their humours, which were fortified with years: As I found that whatever I said was offensive, even those things which others would have been pleased with, I knew not what to do. One day, weighed down with grief, about six months after I was married, being alone, I was tempted even to cut out my tongue, that I might no longer irritate those who seized at every word with rage and resentment—But thou O Gop didst stop me short and shewed me my folly. I prayed continually.

tinually. I communicated. I wished even to becomedumb, so simple and ignorant was I. Though I have had my share of crosses, I never found any so difficult to support, as that of perpetual contrariety, without relaxation; of doing all one can to please, without ever succeeding therein, but even still offending by the very means designed to oblige, and being kept with such persons, in a most severe confinement, from morning till night, without ever daring to quit them. I have found that great crosses overwhelm, and stifle all anger at once. But such a continual contrariety irritates and stirs up a sourness at the heart. It has such a strange effect, that it requires the utmost violence of self restraint, not to break out into vexation and rage.

Such was my condition in marriage, rather that of a slave than of a free person. And for a new augmentation of my disgraces, I perceived four months after my marriage that my husband was gouty. This malady caused me many croses, both within and without. He had the gout twice this year, six weeks each time. Soon after it returned again; and he had it still worse than before. He was so much plagued with it, that he came no more out of his room, nor often out of his bed, which he usually kept for several months. I carefully attended him, though so very young. not fail exerting myself to the utmost in my duty. But alas! all this did not gain me their friendship. I had not even the consolation to know whether what I did was agreeable. I denied myself all the most innocent diversions, tocontinue with my husband; and did whatever I thought would please him. Sometimes he suffered me quietly, and then I esteemed myself very happy: But at other times I seemed insupportable.

supportable. My particular friends said, "I " was of a fine age indeed to be a nurse to an "invalid, and that it was a shameful thing that "I did not set more value on my talents." I answered them, "since I had a husband, I ought "to share his painful as well as his pleasing cir-"cumstances." Besides my mother, instead of pitying me, reprimanded me sharply for my assiduity about my husband; assuring me that I should render myself unhappy by it; and that he would afterwards demand as a duty. what I now did out of virtue. But oh my God. how different were thy thoughts from theirs. what appeared without from what passed within! My husband had that foible, that when any one said any thing to him against me, he flew into a passion at once. It was the conduct of providence over me : For he was a man of reason and loved me much. When I was sick, he was inconsolable. I believe, had it not been for my mother-in-law, and the girl I have spoken of, I should have been very happy with him: For most men have their passions; and it is the duty of a reasonable woman to bear them peaceably, without irritating them more by cross replies.

These things thou hast ordered, oh my God, in such a manner by thy goodness, that I have since seen, it was necessary for making me die to my vain and haughty nature. I should not have had power to destroy it myself, if thou hadst not accomplished it by an all-wise economy of thy providence. I prayed for patience with great earnestness; nevertheless some sallies of my natural liveliness escaped me, and vanquished the resolutions I had taken of being silent. This was doubtless permitted, that my self-love might

in. d F

tinually comesi I have any s cont

For a slip of humiliation, red the occasion of

CHAP. VII.

wast year I did not make a proav afflictions. I still was vain. I ... o excuse myself to my hussylver-in-law, because I stood we of them. Sometimes I fell into was conduct appeared so very unand especially their countenancing according treatment of the girl who by as to my mother-in-law her and and her conduct more tolehou, Oh my Gon, opened my " 'rugs in a very different light. the reasons for suffering, which I had when in the creature: I afterwards saw and effected with joy, that this concascuable as it seemed, and as mortiwas quite necessary for me; for becompliated here as I was at my father's . 'we grown intolerably proud. I had and a more to most of our sex, I could not . A modul woman praised, without finding 'un her, artfully causing it to be re-. ... to lesson the good which was said of her. This fault of mine continued long, and was the fruit of gross and malignant pride, and extravagantly extolling any one proceeds from a like source.

I BECAME pregnant of my first child, which induced them during the time to take great care of me, and my crosses were thereby somewhat mitigated. Indeed I was so ill that it was enough to excite the compassion of the most Beside they had so great a desire indifferent. of having children to inherit their fortunes, that they were continually afraid lest I should any way hurt myself. Yet when I had advanced far in my pregnancy, this care and tenderness of me abated: And once, as my mother-in-law had treated me in a very grating manner, I had the malice to feign a cholic, to give them in my turn some alarm; but as I saw this little artifice gave them too much pain, I told them I was better. No creature could be more heavily loaden with sickness than I was during my pregnancy. Beside continual heavings, I had so strange a distate, except for some fruit, that I could not bear the sight of food. I had likewise continual swoonings and violent pains. I had a very sore time in my delivery yand continued long weak. There was indeed sufficient to exercise patience, and I was enabled to offer up my sufferings to our LORD. I took a fever which rendered me so weak, that after several weeks I could scarce bear to be moved, to have my bed made. When I began to recover, an imposthume fell upon my breast, which was forced to be laid open in two places, which gave me great pain: Yet all these maladies seemed to me only a shadow of troubles, in comparison of those I suffered in the family; which far from diminishing,

diminishing, daily increased. I was also subject to a very violent head-ach. Indeed life was so wearisome to me, that those maladies which were thought mortal did not frighten me.

This lying-in set off my person, and consequently served to encrease my vanity, I was glad of being marked with regard. And, far from avoiding the occasions thereof, I went to the public walks, (though but seldom;) and when in the streets, I pulled off my mask out of vanity, and drew off my gloves to shew my hands. Could there be greater folly? After falling into these weaknesses, I used to weep bitterly at home; yet when occasions offered, I fell into them again.

THERE happened in the family an affair of great consequence, in regard to our temporals. The loss was very considerable. It cost me strange crosses for above a year, not that I cared for the losses which it caused. But I seemed to be the butt of all the ill humours of the family. It would require a volume to describe all that I suffered during this time. With what pleasure did I sacrifice these temporals; and how often resign myself to have begged my bread, if GoD had so ordered it! My mother-in-law was inconsolable. She bid me pray to God for these things; but to me that was wholly impossible. Oh my dearest Lord! never could I pray to thee about the world, or the things thereof; nor sully my sacred addresses to thy Majesty with the dirt of the earth: No. I rather wished to renounce it all, and everything beside whatsoever, for the sake of thy love, and the enjoyment of thy presence in that kingdom, which is not of this world. I wholly sacrificed myself to

thee, even earnestly begging thee rather to reduce our family to beggary, than suffer it to offend thee. In my own mind I excused my mother-in-law, saying to myself, "If thou "hadst taken the pains to scrape and save like "her, thou wouldst not be so indifferent at see-"ing so much lost. Thou enjoyest what cost "thee nothing, and reapest what thou hast not "sowed." Yet all these thoughts could not make me sensible to our losses. I even formed agreeable ideas of our going to the hospital. No state appeared to me so poor and miserable. which I should not have thought easy, in comparison of the continual domestic persecutions I underwent. My father who loved me tenderly. and whom I honoured beyond expression, knew nothing of it. God so permitted it, that I should have him also displeased with me for some time; for my mother was continually telling him that I was an ungrateful creature. shewing no regard for them, but all for my husband's family. Appearances were against me; for I did not go to see them near as often as I should have done. But they knew not the captivity I was in; and what I was obliged to bear in defending them. These complaints of my mother, and a trivial affair that fell out, lessened a little my father's fond regard for me; but it did not hold long. My mother-in-law reproached me, saying, "No afflictions befel them "till I came into the house. All misfortunes " came along with me." On the other side my mother wanted me to exclaim against my husband, which I could never submit to do.

WE continued to meet with loss after loss, the King retrenching a considerable share of our revenues, besides great sums of money, which which we lost by L'Hotel de Ville. I could have no rest or peace in the midst of such great afflictions. I had no mortal either to console me, or to advise with. My sister who had educated me, had departed this life. She died two months before my marriage; and I had ho confidence in any other.

I declare, that I find much repugnance in saying so many things of my mother-in-law, and yet more in what I mention of my husband, as I doubt not but my own indiscretion any caprice, and the occasional sallies of a warm temper, drew many of the crosses upon me. And, although I had what the world calls patience. yet I had neither a relish or love for the cross, and hence I fell into so many faults. Their conduct towards me, which appears so unreasonable, should not be looked upon with worldly eyes; we should look higher, and then we shall perceive, that it was directed by Providence for my eternal advantage. Indeed I should have yielded to the repugnance I felt, and been totally silent with regard to their treatment of me, were it not in obedience to you Sir.

I wow dressed my hair in the most moderate manner, never painted, and to subdue this vanity which still had possession of me, I rarely looked in the glass; my reading was confined to books of devotion, such as Thomas à Kempis, and the works of St. Francis de Sales. I read these aloud for the improvement of the servants, whilst the maid was combing me, and I suffered myself to be dressed just as she pleased, which freed me from a deal of trouble, and took away the occasions wherein my vanity used to be exercised. I knew not how things were

were; but they always liked me, and thought all well in point of dress. - If on some particular days I wanted to appear better, it proved worse; and the more indifferent I was about dress, the better I appeared. How often have I gone to church, not so much to worship Gon as to be seen. Other women, jealous of me, affirmed that I painted; and told my confessor who chid me for it, though I assured him I was innocent. I often spoke in my own praise, and sought to raise myself by depreciating others: Yet these faults gradually decreased; for I was very sorry afterwards for having committed them. I often examined myself very strictly, writing down my faults and slips, from week to week, and month to month, to see how much I was improved or reformed. But alas! this labour, though fatiguing, was but of little service, because I placed most of my trust in my own cares, I wished indeed to be reformed, but my good desires were weak and languid.

My husband's absence was so long, and in the mean time my crosses and vexations at home so great, that I determined to go to him. My mother-in-law strongly opposed it; but this once my father interfering, and insisting on it, she let me go. At my arrival I found he had like to have died. Through vexation and fretting he was very much changed; for he could not finish his affairs, having no liberty to attend them, keeping himself concealed at the hotel de Longueville, where Madam de Longueville was extremely kind to me. But as I appeared publickly, he was in great fear lest I should make him known; in a rage he bid me return home; but love, and my long absence from him, surmounting every other reason, he soon relented, and suffered me to stay with him. He kept me eight

eight days, without letting me stir out of his chamber; till, fearing the effects of such a close confinement on my constitution, he desired me to go and take a walk in the garden, where I met *Madam de Longueville*, who testified great joy on seeing me.

I CANNOT express all the kindness I met with in this house. All the domestics here served me with emulation, and applauded me on account of my poor miserable person, and exterior deportment: Yet I was much on my guard, against paying too great attention thereto. never entered into discourse with any man when I admitted none into my coach, not even my relations, unless my husband were in it. Nor did I 'go into any man's coach. In short, there was not any rule of discretion, which I did not duly observe, to avoid giving any suspicion to my husband, or subject of calumny to others. So much attention had I to a vain point of honour, and so little for the true honour, which is to please Gop. Every one studied there how to contribute to divert or oblige me. Outwardly every thing appeared agreeable, but chagrin had so much overcome and ruffled my husband, that I had continually something to bear. Sometimes he threatened to throw the supper out of the windows: But I said to him, "he would then do me an injury, "as I had a keen appetite." I made him laugh, and laughed with him. This appeased him; and the manner in which I spoke diverted him. Before that, melancholy prevailed over all my endeavours, and over the love he had for me. But God both armed me with patience, and gave me the grace to return him no answer: so that the devil who attempted to draw me into

into some offence, was forced to retire in confusion, through the signal assistance of that grace.

I FELL into a languishing state; I loved my God and was unwilling to displease him, and I was inwardly grieved on account of that vanity, which still I found myself unable to eradicate: these inward distresses, together with those oppressive crosses, which I had daily to encounter, at length threw me into sickness; and as I was unwilling to incommode the Hotel de Longueville, I had myself moved to another house. The disease proved violent and extremely tedious, insomuch that the physicians despaired of my life. The priest, who was a pious man, seemed fully satisfied with the state of my mind, and said, "I should die like a saint." But my sins were too present to my mind, and too painful to my heart, to have such a presumption. At midnight they administered the sacrament to me, as they hourly expected my departure. It was a scene of general distress in the family, and among all that knew me. There were none indifferent to my death but myself, I beheld it without fear, and was rendered insensible to its approach. It was far otherwise with my husband, he was inconsolable, and in agony of grief, when he saw there was no hope left; but I no sooner began to recover, than notwithstanding all his love his usual fretfulness returned. I now recovered almost miraculously; and to me this disorder proved a great blessing: for beside a very great patience under violent pains, it served to instruct me much in my view of the emptiness of all worldly things; it detached me from myself and gave me new courage to suffer better than I

strongth in my heart, with a desire to please and be faithful to him in my condition. I respect several other advantages from it, which I need not relate. I had yet six months to drag along with a slow fever and hepatic flux. He was thought that would have brought me to my end. But thy time, Oh my Gom, was not yet arrived for taking me to thyself. Thy designs over me were widely different from the expectations of those about me; it being thy determination to make me both the object of thy mercy and the victim of thy justice.

CHAP. VIII.

A FTER long languishing at length I regained my former health; about which time my dear mother departed this life in great tranquility of mind; having beside her other good qualities, been particularly charitable to the poor. This virtue so acceptable to God, he was graciously pleased to begin rewarding even in this life, with such a spirit of resignation, that though she was but twenty-four hours sick, she was made perfectly easy about every thing that was near and dear to her in this world.—I now applied myself to my duties, never failing to practise that of prayer twice a day. I watched over myself, to subdue my spirit continually, I went

went to visit the poor in their houses, assisted them in their distempers and distresses; and did (according to my understanding) all the good I knew. Thou, oh my God, increased both my love and my patience, in proportion to my sufferings. I regretted not the temporal advantages with which my mother distinguished my brother above me; yet at home they fell on me about that, as about every thing else. I was also very much distressed with a second pregnancy, had for some time a tertian ague, and was very feeble. I did not indeed serve thee yet with that fervour which thou wast pleased to give me soon after: For I would still have been glad to reconcile thy love with the love of myself and of the creatures; and unhappily I always found some who loved me, and whom I could not forbear wishing to please; not that I loved them, but for the love I bore to myself.

enced only in surply the

A LADY, who was an exile, came to my father's house. He offered her an appartment in it which she accepted, and staid there a long time. She was one of true piety and inward devotion. She had a great esteem for me, because I desired to love God, and employed myself in the exterior works of charity. She remarked that I had the virtues of an active and bustling life; but had not yet attained the simplicity of prayer which she experienced. Sometimes she dropped a word to me on that subject: But as my time was not vet come, I did not understand her. Her example instructed me more than her words. I observed on her countenance something which marked a great enjoyment of the presence of God. This I tried, by the exertion of studied reflection and thoughts, to attain, but with much trouble to little little purpose. I wanted to have by my own efforts what I could not acquire but in ceasing from all efforts.

My Father's nephew, of whom I have made mention before, was returned from Cochinchina, to carry over some priests from Europe. I was exceeding glad to see him, well remembering what good his first passing by had done me. The lady above mentioned was no less rejoiced than I; they understood one another immediately and conversed together in a spiritual language. The virtue of this excellent relation charmed me; and I admired his continual prayer without being able to comprehend it. I endeavoured to meditate, and to think on God without intermission, to utter prayers and efaculations, but could not acquire, by all my toil, what God at length gave me himself, and which is experienced only in simplicity. cousin did all he could to attach me more strongly to God. He conceived an exceeding great affection for me. The purity he observed in me from the corruptions of the age, the abhorrence of sin at a time of life when others are beginning to relish the pleasures of it, (for I was not yet eighteen) gave him a great tenderness for me. I complained to him of my faults ingenuously; for these I saw clearly; but as the difficulties I found, of entirely reforming myself much abated my courage, he cheered and exhorted me to support myself, and to persevere in my good endeavours for it. He would fain have introduced me into a more simple manner of prayer, but I was not yet prepared for it.

I BELIEVE his prayers were more effectual than

than his words; for no sooner was he gone out of my father's house, than thou, oh my divine Love! manifested thy favour to me. The desire I had to please thee, the tears I shed, the manifold pains I underwent, the labours I sustained, and the little fruit I reaped from them, moved thee with compassion. Such was the state of my soul, when thy goodness, overpassing all my vileness and infidelities, and abounding in proportion to my wretchedness—now granted me in a moment, what all my own efforts could never procure.—For beholding me rowing with such laborious toil, the breath of thy divine operations turned in my favour, and carried me full sail over this sea of affliction.

I HAD often spoke to my confessor about the great anxiety it gave me to find I could not meditate, nor exert my imagination in order to pray. Subjects of prayer which were too extensive, were useless to me; such as were short and pithy suited me better; but my confessor, I found, did not comprehend the matter, or understand my meaning.

Ar length, God permitted a very religious person, of the order of St. Francis to pass by my father's habitation. He had intended going another way, that was shorter and more commodious; but a secret power changed his design. He saw there was something for him to do, and imagined that God had called him for the conversion of a man of some distinction in that country; but his labours there proved fruitless. It was the conquest of my soul which was designed. As soon as he arrived in our country, he came to see my father, who was rejoiced at his coming. At this time I was lying-in of

of my second son, and my father dangerously ill. and expected to die. For some time they concealed his sickness from me, on account of my condition; till an indiscreet person abruptly told me. Instantly I arose, all weak as I was, and went to see him at the hazard of my life; and a dangerouss illness it cost me. My father was recovered, but not entirely; yet enough to give me new marks of his affection, I told him of the strong desire I had to love God, and my great sorrow at not being able to do it fully. My father, as he had a great fondness for me, thought he could not give me a more solid indication thereof, than in procuring me an acquaintance with this worthy man. He told me what he knew of him, and urged me to go see him.

I MADE at first a difficulty of doing it, being intent on observing the rules of the strictest prudence. However, my father's repeated instances had with me the weight of a positive command, I thought I could not do that amiss, which I only did in obedience to him. I therefore took a kinswoman along with me, and At first he seemed a little confused; for he was reserved towards women. Being newly come out of a five year's solitude, he was surprized that I was the first to address him. spoke not a word for some time. I knew not what to attribute his silence to. I did not hesitute to speak to him, and to tell him in a few words, my difficulties about prayer. He precently replied, "It is, Madam, because you "seck without what you have within. " custom yourself to seek God in your heart, " and you will there find him."

HAVING said these words, he left me. They were to me like the stroke of a dart, which peetrated through my heart. I felt at this instant a very deep wound, a wound so delightful that I desired not to be cured. These words brought into my heart, what I had been seeking so many years; or rather they discovered to me what was there, and which I had not enjoyed for want of knowing it. Oh my Lord! Thou wast in my heart, and demanded only a simple turning of my mind inward, to make me perceive thy presence. Oh infinite Goodness! How was I running hither and thither to seek thee, my life was a burden to me, though my happiness was within myself. I was poor in the midst of riches and ready to perish with hunger, near a table plentifully spread, and a continual feast. Oh Beauty, antient and new! Why have I known thee so late! Alas! I sought thee where thou wast not, and did not seek thee where thou wast. It was for want of understanding these words of thy gospel, "The kingdom of Gon cometh "not with observation: neither shall they say, "Lo here, or lo there: For behold the king-"dom of Gop is within you." This I now experienced. For thou becamest my King, and my heart thy kingdom, wherein thou didst reign supreme, and performed all thy sacred Con come director, he said be would westliw

I TOLD this good man, "that I did not know "what he had done to me, that my heart was "quite changed, that God was there; for from "that moment he had given me an experience "of his presence in my soul; not by thought "or any application of mind, but as a thing "really possessed after the sweetest manner." I experienced those words in the Canticles: "Thy

THE LIFE OF

CHAP. IX.

once, which is far above extasies, transports and visions. All these gifts are less pure, and more subject to the illusion or deceits from the enemy.

Visions are in the inferior powers of the Soul, and cannot produce true union—therefore the Soul must not dwell or rely upon them, or be retarded by them—they are but favours and gifts, 'tis the Giver alone must be our object and aim.

It is of such that St. PAUL speaks, where he says, That "Satan transforms himself into an "angel of light." 2 Cor. 11. 18, which is generally the case with such as are fond of visions, and lay a stress on them; because they are apt to convey a vanity to the soul, or at least to hinderit from humbly attending to God only.

Extastes arise from a sensible relish, and may be termed a kind of spiritual sensuality, wherein the soul letting itself go too far, by reason of the sweetness it finds in them, falls imperceptibly into decay. The crafty enemy presents such sort of interior elevations and raptures, for baits to trepan the soul; to render it sensual, to fill it with vanity and self-love, to fix its esteem and attention on the gifts of God, and to hinder it from following Jesus Christ in the way of renunciation, and of death to all things.

And

And as to distinct interior words, they too are subject to illusion; the enemy can form and counterfeit them: Or, if they come from a good angel—(for God himself never speaks thus) we may mistake and misapprehend them—for they are spoke in a divine manner, but we construe them in a human and carnal manner.

But the immediate word of God-has neither tone nor articulation.—It is mute, silent, and unutterable; for it is Jesus Christ himself the real and essential Word—who in the centre of the Soul, that is disposed for receiving him, never one moment ceases from his living, fruitful, and divine operation.

—OH thou Word made flesh—whose silence is inexpressible eloquence—thou canst never be misapprehended or mistaken;—thou becomest the Life of our Life, and the Soul of our Soul:—How infinitely is thy Language elevated above all the utterance of human and finite articulation. Thy adorable Power, all efficacious in the soul that has received it, communicates itself through them to others, and as a divine seed becomes fruitful to eternal life.

THE revelations of things to come are also very dangerous; for the devil can counterfeit them, as he did formerly in the heathen temples, where he uttered Oracles. Frequently they raise false ideas, vain hopes, and frivolous expectations; take up the mind with future events, hinder it from dying to self, and prevent it following Jesus Christin hispoverty, abnegation, and death.

WIDELY different is The Revelation of JESUS CHRIST.

Christ, Gal. 1. 16. mentioned by St. Paul. This is made to the soul when the eternal Word is communicated. It makes us new creatures, created anew in Him. This revelation is what the devil cannot counterfeit. From hence proceeds the only safe transport or extasy, which is operated by naked faith alone, and dying even to the gifts of God, how sublime and excellent soever they may appear; because as long as the soul continues resting in them, it does not fully renounce itself, and so never passing into God, loses the real enjoyment of the Giver, by attachments to the gifts. This is truly an unutterable loss.

Lest I should let my mind go after these gifts, and steal myselffrom thy love, oh my God, thou wast pleased to fix me in a continual adherence to thyself alone. Souls thus directed get the shortest way. They are to expect great sufferings, especially if they are mighty in faith, in mortification and deadness to all but God. A pure and disinterested love, and intenseness of mind for the advancement of thy interest alone.

—These are the dispositions thou didst then implant in me, and even a fervent desire of suffering for thee. The cross, which I had hitherto borne only with resignation was now become my delight, and the special object of my rejoicing.

CHAP. X.

T WRIT an account of my wonderful change. in point of happiness, to that good father who had been made the instrument of it. It filled him both with joy and astonishment. Oh my Gop, what penances did the love of sufferings induce me to undergo! I practised all the austerities I could imagine: But they were all too weak to satisfy the desire I had for suffering. Though my body was very delicate, the instruments of penance tore it without giving me pain enough, as I thought. I often kept wormwood in my mouth, and put coloquinted in my food; although I eat so little that it was wonderful how I lived, being continually in extreme weakness. I was impelled to deprive myself of the most innocent indulgencies: all that could gratify my taste was denied it, and I took every thing that could mortify and disgust it, in so much that my appetite, which had been extremely delicate, was so far conquered, that at length I could scarcely prefer one thing to another.

I DRESSED loathsome sores and wounds, and gave remedies to the sick. At my first engaging in this sort of employ, my stomach used to turn; and it was with the greatest difficulty I was able to bear it. But as soon as my aversion ceased, and that I could stand the most offensive things, other channels of employment were opened to me: For I did nothing of myself, but left myself to be wholly governed by my sovereign in all things.

THE LIFE OF

THEN that good father asked me how I loved God, I hiswered, "Far more than the most translocate lover his beloved; and that even this comparison was inadequate, since the ove of the creatures never can attain to this, enther in strength or in depth." This love of four occupied my heart so constantly and so roughly, that I could think of nothing else, as meed I judged nothing else worthy of my houghts.

The good father above mentioned was an excient preacher. He was desired to preach in
the parish to which I belonged. When I came,
the parish to which I belonged. When I came,
the parish to which I belonged. When I could
tention open my eyes, nor hear any thing he
take. I found that thy word, oh my God, made
ts own impression on my heart, and there had
ts effect, without the mediation of words, or
the attention to them. And I have found it so
that since, though after a different manner, acthing to the different degrees and states I
the passed through. So deeply was I settled in
the award spirit of prayer, that I could scarce
the more pronounce the vocal prayers.

mmersion in God absorbed all things in I could no more see the saints, or even the second Virgin, out of God; but I beheld that it in him. And though I tenderly loved white, as St. Peter, St. Paul, St. Maddalene, St. Teresa, yet I could make a myself images of them, nor invoke that out of God.

the heart, which had begun my had held the feast of the blessed virgin,

in the Convent in which was that good father my director. I went in the morning to get the indulgencies, which are then dispensed, and was much surprized when I came there, and found that I could not attempt it; though I stayed above five hours in the church. I was penetrated with so lively a dart of pure love, that I could not resolve to abridge by indulgencies the pains due to my sins. "Oh my love I cried, I "am willing to suffer for thee. I find no other "pleasure but in suffering for thee. Indul-" gences may be good for those who know not "the value of sufferings, who choose not that "thy divine justice should be satisfied; who, "having mercenary souls, are not so much "afraid of displeasing thee, as of the pains "annexed to sin." Yet, fearing I might be mistaken, and commit a fault in not getting the indulgencies, for I had never heard of any one being in such a way before, I returned again to try to get them, but in vain; so not knowing what to do, I resigned myself herein to our Lord: and, when I returned home, writ to that good father an account of my disposition and sentiments, in such a manner, that, preaching that day, he made what I had writ a part of his sermon, therein reciting it verbatim as I had wrote it.

I now quitted all companies, bade farewel for ever to plays and diversions, dancing, unprofitable walks and parties of pleasure. For two years I had left off dressing my hair, it became me, and my husband approved it. My only pleasure now was to steal some moments to be alone with thee, oh thou, who art my only Love! All other pleasure was a pain to me. I lost not thy presence, which was given me by a continual

When that good far God, I answered, "I "passionate lover hi "this comparison "love of the creat "either in streng! God occupied a strongly, that indeed I just thoughts.

THE greedlent virthe partition I was neit! said its

er .

in the same will, siness the same not as I same in the same in the

its effect is union of the union of the union of the inding, and are not active are of unsient effects. It is soul to God, causes self-will and with it the charity with gradually to be therein, as to

emon of the powyey still subsist,
in proportion
it becomes so
it all the activity
to that of God,
it is docile, and
emptied of all
mosite to the will
and little, deof its own, and
wishing nothing
But this never

be effected by the activity of our own willeven though it were employed in continual acts of resignation; because these, though very virtuous, are so far one's own actions, and cause the will to subsit in a multiplicity, in a kind of separate distinction or dissimilitude from Gon.

When the Will of the creature entirely submits to that of the Creator, suffering freely and voluntarily—and yielding only a concurrence to the divine will (which is its absolute submission—) suffering itself to be totally surmounted and destroyed, by the operations of Charity. This absorbs the will into itself, consummates it in that of God, and purifies it from all narrowness, dissimilitude, and propriety or selfishness.

The case is the same with the other two powers, whereinto by means of Charity, the two other theological virtues, Faith and Hope are introduced. Faith so strongly seizes on the understanding, as to make it decline all reasonings, all particular illuminations and illustrations, how sublime soever; which sufficiently demonstrates how far visions, revelations, extasies, &c. differ from this, and hinder the soul from being lost in God: For though by them it appears lost in him for some transient moments, yet it is not a true loss; since the soul which is entirely lost in God finds itself again no more. Faith then makes the soul lose every distinct light, in order to place it in its own pure light.

As we see that the sun with his general light, entirely covers or drowns all the little distinct lights of the stars, which (in its absence) glow, and are brightly discernible; yet do not give us a light a light whereby we may see things as they are, in their proper forms and colours: So visions and extasies, however discernible by reason of their little extent, (being very narrow and partial) cannot confirm us in the truth; they are too liable to make us mistake by their uncertain glimmering. It is the same case with all the inward openings which are not from true FAITH. This Faith is the gift of the holy spirit, which, as it arises, undeceives the soul from the misconceptions occasioned by the others, and obscuring all the self-pleasing lights, puts it in the pure and sacred light of truth, which, although much less gratifying, is a thousand fold more secure than all others—and is properly the true light of this life, until that Jesus Christ, the eternal Light, rises in the Soul, and enlightens it himself. He who enlighteneth every man that cometh into the world, of the new life in Gop,—This is elevated,—but I have yielded myself to be carried away by that spirit which has caused me to write.

THE memory too, finds all its little activities surmounted by degrees, and absorbed in hope, and finally the powers are all concentered and lost in pure Charity, which ingulphs them into itself by means of their sovereign the WILL, for the Will is the Sovereign of the powers, as Charity is the Queen of the Virtues, and unites them all in herself.

This reunion which is thus made is called, the central union or unity—because that by means of the Will and Charity, all are reunited in the center of the Soul in God, our ultimate end.—According to St. John,—He who dwelleth in Charity, or Love, dwelleth in GOD, for God is Love.

This union of my will to thine, oh my God, and this ineffable presence was so sweet and powerful, that I was compelled to yield to its delightful power,—which was strict and severe to my minutest faults.—

CHAP. XI.

MY Senses (as I have described) were continually mortified, and under perpetual restraint. For it should be well noted, that to conquer them totally, it is necessary to deny them the smallest relaxation, until the victory is compleated. We see those who content themselves in practising great outward austerities, and yet by indulging their senses in what is called innocent and necessary, they remain for ever unsubdued; so that austerities, however severe, will not conquer the senses. To destroy their power, the most effectual means is, in general, to deny them firmly what will please, to give them every thing that disgusts; and to persevere in this, until they are reduced to be without appetite or repugnance. But if we attempt, during the warfare, to grant them any relaxation, we act like those, who, under pretext of strengthening

strengthening a man, who was condemned to be starved to death, should give him from time to time a little nourishment, which indeed would prolong his torments, and postpone his death.

It is just the same with the death of the senses, the powers, the understanding, and self will; for if we do not eradicate every remains of self subsisting in these, we support them in a dying life to the end. This state and its termination, are clearly set forth by St. Paul. He speaks of bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jesus. (2. Cor. iv. 10.) but, lest we should rest here, he fully distinguishes this, from the state of being dead, and having our life hid with Christ in God.—It is only by a total death to self we can be lost in God.

He who is thus dead has no farther need of mortification; for the very end of mortification is accomplished in him, and all is become new. It is an unhappy error in those good souls, who have arrived at a conquest of the bodily senses. through this unremited and continual mortification, that they should still continue attached to the exercise of it; they should rather drop their attention thereto, and remain in indifference. accepting with equality, the good as the bad, the sweet as the bitter, and bend their whole attention, to a labour of greater importance; namely, the mortification of the mind and selfwill, begining by dropping all the activity of self, which can never be done without the most profound prayer; no more than the death of the senses can be perfected, without profound recollection joined to mortification; and indeed recollection is the chief means, whereby we attain to a conquest of the senses, as it detaches

and separates us from them, and sweetly saps the very cause from whence they derive their influence over us.

THE more thou didst augment my love, and my patience, O my Lord, the less respite had I from the most oppressive crosses: But love rendered them easy to bear.—O ye poor souls, who exhausted yourselves with needless vexation, if you would but seek God in your hearts, there would be a speedy period to all your troubles; for the encrease of crosses would proportionably encrease your delight.

Love, at the beginning, athirst for mortification impelled me to seek and invent various kinds, and it is surprizing that as soon as the hitterness of any new mode of mortification was exhausted, another kind was pointed to me, and I was inwardly led to pursue it. Divine Love so enlightened my heart, and so scrutinized into its secret springs, that the smallest defects became exposed. If I was about to speak, something wrong was instantly pointed to me, and I was compelled to silence; if I kept silence, faults herein was presently discovered,—in every action there wassomething defective, in my mortifications, my penances, my alms-givings, my When I walked, I retirement, I was faulty. observed there was something wrong; if I spoke any way in my own favour, I saw pride.—If I said within myself, alas, I will speak no more, here was self. If I was cheerful and open I was condemned;—this pure Love found always matter for reproof in me, and was jealous that nothing should escape unnoticed. It was not that I was particular attentive over myself, for it was even with constraint I could look at all at myself; as my attention towards God, by an attachment. was without inupon him, and
ne. and he led me
went all things; I
we what I felt to
nyself that I could
commation; when I atest immediately disestimation of ideas: I
nexpressible; I saw by
sas God that thus wholly
did not reason at all

... be supposed that Divine unts to go unpunished. secur dost thou punish the case loving and beloved of mean not externally, for this to the smallest fault, in a . . wat to purify radically; and ... circshments than otherwise. is in which he corrects his , it, or it is impossible to con-.... it is; and in my attempt :'l be unintelligible, except It is an internal burning, God to purge away the ceme pain, until this purifica-It is like a dislocated joint, consult torment, until the bone is so severe, that the soul to satisfy God for the fault, ce be torn in pieces than endure Sometimes she flies to others. state that she may find consolation,

lation, but thereby she frustrates God's designs towards her. It is of the utmost consequence to know what use to make of the distress, as the whole of one's spiritual advancement depends thereon. We should at these seasons of internal anguish, obscurity and mourning, cooperate with God, and endure this consuming torture in its utmost extent (whilst it continues) without attempting to lessen or encrease it; but bear it passively, nor seek to satisfy God by any thing we can do of ourselves. To continue passive at such a time is extremely difficult, and requires great firmness and courage: I knew some, who being defective herein, never advanced farther in the spiritual process, because they grew impatient under the pain, and quickly sought some means of consolation. But my Lord taught me to seek no redress, until he had, as it were, fully avenged himself. how lovely, how rigidly just and pityless, yet how sweet are his dealings to his Beloved! I have endured this torment, not only many hours, but days, in proportion to the nature of my fault; a hasty word, an unguarded look, was punished with severity; and I saw clearly, that had I attempted to put my own hand to the work, under pretence of supporting the ark, I should have been punished like Uzza. Indeed it was inexpressibly difficult, to lie passive under these crucifying operations of the divine spirit.

THE THE

Treate at Ichina THE PERSON NAMED IN THE PERSON IN THE PARTY OF THE PARTY IN THE P THE TOTAL STREET, OF THE METABLE THE PERSON NAMED IN THE PERSON NAMED IN --- I have the tracked by the comments of ्र १३ हा. स्टाप्टल करू पार्ट गांध 🛚 🖼 - : The me ten I well me wime THE PART THE TENT THE TOMERNEY IN THE THE RELIVER WAS DO THEN. TO MINING MY महरक्षात्रक क्रांच है कि क्षेत्र एक मा THE REAL PROPERTY OF THE PROPE A ten ner were un note nimen I main me in the the even them my termson he is THE LOW NOT THE TO SEE THEIR SAFFORD, AND THE min no en l'ave moden ni l'aat a greek REAL IT THERE TO SUFFROUND HAVELE AS TO THE WAS : because me became the more inscient for it : Actor mag me with things which coght to mve made her diasu, and to have covered her with staine. As she saw that I contradicted and reserved her no more in any thing, she proceeded no treat me still worse: And when I asked her part, in for the very offences which she had green me, see triumphed, saving, "I knew well I was in the right." Her arrogance rese to that height, that I would not have really the meanest servant, or vassal, as she treaten me.

every roughly, and spoke to me very insoleury lead to her, "It is not on my account

"that I am willing to answer you, for what " you do gives me no pain, but lest you should "act thus before persons to whom it would "give offence: Moreover, as I am your Mis-"tress, God is assuredly offended therewith." She left me that moment, and ran like a mad woman to meet my husband, telling him, "she "would stay no longer, I treated her so ill, and "that I hated her for the care she took of him "in his indispositions, which were continual, "wanting her not to do any service for him." As my husband was very hasty, he took fire at these words. I finished the dressing of myself alone, since she had left me, and durst not call another girl; for she would not suffer another girl to come near me. All on a sudden, I saw my husband coming like a Lion, for he never was in such a transport as this. I thought he was going to strike me: I expected the blow with tranquility; he threatened me with his lifted crutch; I thought he was going to knock me down with it; and holding myself closely united to God, I beheld it without pain. However he did not strike me, for he had presence of mind enough to see what an indignity it would be; but in his rage he threw it at me. It fell near me, but did not touch me; after which he discharged himself in such language, as if I had been a street beggar, or the most infamous of all creatures. I kept a profound silence, being recollected in God, to suffer for his love all these things: The girl in the mean time comes in. At the sight of her his rage redoubles. I kept near to God, as a victim disposed to suffer whatever he would permit; when my husband ordered me to beg her pardon, which I readily did, and thereby appeared him. I went presently into my dear closet,

where I no sooner was, than my divine Director impelled me to make this girl a present, to recompence her for the cross which she had caused me, which I did. She was a little astonished, but her heart was too hard to be gained.

I often acted thus, for she very frequently gave me such opportunities. She had a singular dexterity in attending the sick, and my husband was so almost continually: from hence none but her would be suffered to touch him. For this reason he had a very great regard for her. Moreover, she was so artful that before him she affected an extraordinary respect for me; but when he was not present, if I said a word to her, though with the greatest mildness, if she heard him coming, she cried out with all her might, that she was unhappy; and acted the distressed in such a manner, that without informing himself of the truth, he was irritated against me, as was my mother-in-law too.

The violence I did to my proud and hasty nature was so great; that I could hold out no longer. I was quite spent with it. It seemed sometimes as if I was inwardly rent, and I have often fallen sick with the struggle. She did not forbear exclaiming against me, even before persons of distinction, who came to see me. If I was silent, she took oftence at that yet more, and said, "I despised her." She cried me down, and made complaints of me to every body: But all this redounded to my honour and her own disgrace: My reputation was so well established, on account of my exterior modesty, my devotion, and the great acts of charity which I did, that nothing could shake it.

SOME-

Sometimes she ran out into the very street, crying out against me. One time she exclaimed, "Am not I very unhappy to have such a mistress?" People gathered about her to know what I had done to her; and not knowing what to say, she answered, "I had not spoken "to her all the day." They returned, laughing, and said, "She has done you no great harm then."

I am surprised at the blindness of confessors, and at their permitting their penitents to conceal so much of the truth from them—for the confessor of this girl made her pass for a saint. This he said in my hearing. I answered nothing; for Love would not admit of me speaking of my troubles; but that I should consecrate them all to him by a profound silence.

My husband was out of humour with my devotion, it became insupportable to him, "what "says he, you love Gop so much, that you love "me no longer;" so little did he comprehend that the true conjugal love is that which God himself forms in the heart that loves him. Oh, thou who art pure and holy, thou imprinted in me from the first such a love of chastity, that there was nothing in the world which I would not have undergone to possess and preserve it. I endeavoured not to be disagreeable to my husband in any thing, and to please him in every thing he could require of me. God gave me such a purity of soul at that time, that I had not so much as a bad thought. Sometimes my husband said to me, "One sees plainly that " you never lose the presence of God."

THE world, seeing I quitted it, persecuted and turned me into ridicule. I was its enter-tainment,

tainment, and the subject of its fables. could not bear that a woman, who was scarce twenty years of age, should thus make war against it, and overcome. My mother-in-law took part with the world, and blamed me for not doing many things, that in her heart she would have been highly offended had I done I was as one lost, and all alone: So little commerce had I with the creatures, farther than necessity required. I seemed to experience literally those words of St. PAUL, "I live, yet," "no more I, but CHRIST liveth in me;" for he was become the soul of my soul, and the life of my life. His operation was so powerful, so sweet, and so secret, all together, that I could not express them. We went into the country. about some business. Oh! what unutterable communications did I there experience in retirement!

I was insatiable for prayer, I arose at four o'clock in the morning to pray. I went very far to the church, which was so situated that the coach could not come to it. There was a steep hill to go down and another to ascend. All that cost me nothing: I had such a longing desire to meet with God, as my only good, who on his part was graciously forward to give himwell' to his poor creature, and for it to do even visible miracles. Such as saw me lead a life so very different from the women of the world, They attributed it to stusaid I was a fool. Sometimes they said, "What can all "this mean? Some people think this lady has "parts, but nothing of them appears." For if I went into company, often I could not speak; so much was I engaged within, so inward with the Lord, as not to attend to any thing else: If any

any near me spoke, I heard nothing of what they said. I generally took one with me, that this might not appear. I took some work, to hide under that appearance, the real employ of my heart. When I was alone, the work dropped out of my hands: and I could do nothing else but resign myself to be wholly taken up with love. I wanted to persuade a relation of my She thought me a husband's to practise prayer. fool, for depriving myself of all the amusements of the age: But the Lord has since opened her eyes, to make her despise them. I could have wished to teach all the world to love God; and thought it depended only on them to feel what I felt. God made use of my thinking thus, to gain many souls to himself.

THE good father I have spoken of, who was the instrument of my conversion, brought me acquainted with Genevieve Granger, prioress of the Benedictines, one of the greatest servants of God of her time. She proved of very great service to me, as in the sequel will appear. My confessor, who had told every one that I was a saint before, when so full of miseries, and so far from the condition to which God in his mercy had now brought me, seeing I placed a confidence in the Father of whom I have spoken, and that I steered in a road that was unknown to him, declared openly against me: And the monks of his order persecuted me much. They even preached publicly against me as a person under a delusion.

My husband and mother-in-law, who till now had been indifferent about this confessor, then joined him and ordered me to leave off prayer, and the exercise of piety; but that I could not

tainment, and the subjecould not bear that a w twenty years of age, against it, and overco: took part with the v not doing many thi would have been li them. I was as on commerce had I w. necessity requir literally those w "no more I, In. was become: my life. sweet, and not express about so. commu: tirement

. seized ıs :arried - rifferent a what I _ n:: could aster, mani-....e: And werimes told ... : from being to hide it. en that I knew == some kinds and acted berceive it. _ erec me scarcely ... continued to ___ austerities___ zish the fresh-

I woo'clood far to the costeep All of desconse!

Vi. Ve st.

sickness and no e ractice of prayer, How dear did is 'ermer! But what sizes esteeming the ac rather say that wenter with the cross. ve inseparable ite! When your . wi, how perfectly it ... we the object of my ... ecrived thee I have , gross, nor it seems a long time I CHE CARS.

hinder

from practising prayer, and from other GRANGER. And, he violently p my husband and mother-in-law to me from praying: The method they to effect it was, to watch me from mornill night. I durst not go out from my ...ther-in-law's chamber, or from my husband's Sometimes I carried my work to the ...d-side. window, under a pretence of seeing better, in order to relieve myself with some moments repose; but they came to watch me very closely, to see if I did not pray instead of working. When my husband and mother-in-law played at cards, if I did but turn towards the fire, they watched to see if I continued my work or shut my eyes; if they observed I closed them, they would be in a fury against me for several hours: But what is most strange, when my husband went abroad, having some days of health, he would not allow me to pray in his absence. He marked my work, and sometimes, after he was just gone out, returning immediately, if he found me in my closet, he would be in a rage. In vain I said to him, "Surely, Sir, what matters "it what I do when you are absent, if I be as-"siduous in attending you when you are "present?" That would not satisfy him; he insisted upon it that I should no more pray in his absence than his presence.

I BELIEVE there is hardly a torment equal to that of being ardently drawn to retirement, and not having it in one's power to be retired: But, oh my God, the war they raised, to hinder me from loving thee, did but augment my love; and while they were striving to prevent my addresses to thee, thou drewest me into an inexpressible silence; and the more they laboured

o separate me from thee, the more closely didst thea state me to thyself: The flame of thy love was kindled, and kept up, by every thing that has done to extinguish it.

through compliance I played at with my husband, and at such times was conteriorly attracted than if I had been I was scarce able to contain the and burned in my soul, which had all the what men call love, but nothing of its ... Goody; for the more ardent, the more very thing that was done to suppress it: And and print of prayer was nourished and increased, from their contrivances and endeavours, to diamow meany time for practising it. warmout considering of a motive, or reason for leving, for nothing passed in my head, but anch in the innermost of my soul. I thought and about any recompence, gift, or favour, The Wellwhich he could bestow or I receive. ty loved was himself the only object, which man ted my heart. I could not contemplate The structures. I knew nothing else, but to love with anylor. Oh, ignorance more truly learned but an accure of the Doctors, since it taught Curist crucified, and brought as the indexe with his holy Cross. I could ' , we had to die, in order to be inseparably Ve al this passed in the will, the imagican the understanding being absorbed in ... I on of enjoyment, I knew not what y young never read or heard of such a was not right, for before this I had with the operations of God in souls. I had

I had only read St. Francis de Sales, Thomas a Kempis, the Spiritual Combat, and the holy Scriptures; I was quite a stranger to those interior and spiritual books wherein such states are described.

Then all those amusements and pleasures that are so prized and esteemed, appeared to me dull and insipid, so that I wondered how it could be that I had ever enjoyed them.—And indeed since that time, I could never find any satisfaction or enjoyment out of God, although I have sometimes been unfaithful enough to endeavour it.—I was not astonished that Martyrs gave their lives for Jesus Christ. I thought them happy, and sighed after their privilege of suffering for him—for I so esteemed the cross that my greatest trouble was, the want of suffering as much as my heart thirsted for.

This respect and esteem for the cross continually increased, and although afterwards, I lost the sensible relish and enjoyment thereof, yet the love and esteem has never quitted me no more than the cross itself.—Indeed it has ever been my faithful companion, changing and augmenting, in proportion to the changes and disposition of my inward state. Oh blessed cross, thou hast never quitted me, since I surrendered myself to my divine *crucified* master, and I still hope that thou wilt never abandon me.—So eager was I for the cross, that I endeavoured to make myself feel the utmost rigour of every mortification—and felt them to the quick: Yet this only served to awaken my desire of suffering, and to shew me that it is God alone, that can prepare and send crosses suitable to a soul that thirsts for a following of his sufferings, and a conformity conformity of his death. The more my state of prayer augmented, my desire of suffering grew stronger, and the full weight of heavy crosses from every side came thundering upon me.

The peculiar property of this prayer of the heart is to give a strong faith. Mine was without limits, as was also my resignation to God, and my confidence in him, my love of his will, and of the orders of his providence over me. I was very timorous before, but now feared nothing. It is in such a case that one feels the efficacy of these words of the gospel, My yoke weasy, and my burden is light. Matt. xi. 30.

CHAP. XIII:

I HAD a secret desire given me from that time to be wholly devoted to the disposal of my God, let that be what it would. I said, "What "couldst thou demand of me, that I would not "willingly sacrifice or offer thee? Oh, spare me "not." The cross and humiliations were represented to my mind, in the most frightful colours—but this deterred me not; I yielded myself up as a willing victim, and indeed our Lord seemed to accept of my sacrifice, for his divine providence furnished me incessantly with occasions and opportunities for putting it to the test.

I coulb

I could scarce hear God or our Lord Jesus CHRIST spoken of, without being almost transported out of myself. What surprised me the most was, the great difficulty I had to say the vocal prayers I had been used to repeat. As soon as I opened my lips to pronounce them, the love of God seized me so strongly, that I was swallowed up in a profound silence, and an inexpressible peace. I made fresh attempts but still in vain. I began again and again, but could not go on. And as I had never before heard of such a state, I knew not what to do. My inability still increased, because my love to God was still growing more strong, more violent and more overpowering. There was made in me, without the sound of words, a continual prayer, which seemed to me to be the prayer of our LORD JESUS CHRIST himself; a prayer of the Word, which is made by the Spirit, that according to St. PAUL, asketh for us that which is good, perfect, and conformable to the Will of God. Rom. viii. 26, 27.

My domestick crosses continued—I was deprived of seeing or even writing to Mrs. Granger, my very going to divine service or the blessed sacrament, were a source of woeful offences, and the only amusement I had left me, was the visiting and attending the poor sick and sore, and performing the lowest offices for them.

But now my prayer-time began to be exceeding distressful, I compelled myself to continue at it, though deprived of all comfort and consolation, and yet when I was not employed therein, I felt an ardent desire and longing for it.—I suffered inexpressible anguish in my mind, and endeavoured with the severest inflic-

tions

where a sustenties to mitigate and di-- - we it wants the devices and barrenness wand no more that enlivening ... resuct with great swiftness. My paswere not vet thoroughly mortified) une caused me new conflicts. I seemed a way to be like those young brides, who , car acal of difficulty to lay aside their and follow their husbands to the war. way was a vain complacency and fondness My propensity to pride and va-... v. which seemed quite dead, while I was so area with the love of God, now shewed itself which are save me severe exercise; which imagine amount the exterior beauty of my perwas to God incessantly, that he would conversion me that obstacle, and make me with I could even have wished to be deaf. sind, and dumb, that nothing might divert me well my love of God.

the out on a journey, which we had then added and here I appeared more than ever have lamps which emit a new glimmering and when they are just on the point of extingual how many snares were laid in the them at every step. I even midelities through unwatchfulness. It as foot with what rigour didst thou which I tell into, through a weak and even against my will! Thou which I tell into, through a weak and even against my will! Thou has been was to have heen

been cured of my:infidelity; and to what severe chastisement did I not condemn myself! Sometimes thou treated me like a father who pities the child, and caresses it after its involuntary faults. How often didst thou make me sensible of thy love towards me, notwithstanding my blemishes. It was the sweetness of this love after my falls which caused my greatest pain; for the more the amiableness of thy love was extended to me, the more inconsolable I was for having departed ever so little from thee. When I had let some inadvertence escape me. I found thee ready to receive me: And I have often cried out, "Oh my God! is it possible "that thou canst be so gracious to such an of-"fender, and so indulgent to my faults; so "propitious to one who has wandered astray, "from thee, by vain compliances, and an un-"worthy fondness for frivolous objects; And "yet no sooner do I return, than I find thee "waiting, with open arms ready to receive me "after all."

O SINNER, sinner! Hast thou any reason to complain of God? Ah, if there yet remains any justice in thee, confess the truth, and own that it is owing to thyself if thou goest wrong; that in departing from him thou disobeyest his call; and that, after all this, when thou returnest, he is ready to receive thee; and if thou returnest not, he makes use of the most engaging and prevalent motives to win thee thereto: Yet thou turnest a deaf ear to his voice; thou wilt not hear him. Thou sayest he speaks not to thee, though he calls loudly. It is therefore only because thou daily rebellest, and art growing daily more and more deaf to the voice of the charmer. Oh my love, I am

sure thou didst never cease to speak to my heart, and wast always ready to succour me in the time of necessity.

WHEN I was at Paris, and the Clergy saw me so young, they appeared astonished. to whom I opened my state told me, "that I-"could never enough thank Gop for the graces "conferred on me; that if I knew them I "should be amazed at them; and that if I were "not faithful, I should be the most ungrateful "of all creatures." Some declared that they never knew any woman whom God held so closely, and in so great a purity of conscience. I believe what rendered it so was the continual care thou hadst over me, oh my God, making me feel thy intimate presence, even as thou hast promised it to us in thy gospel. "If a man "love me, my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him." John xiv. 23. The continual experience of thy presence in me was what preserved me. became deeply assured of what the prophet hath said, "Except the Lord keep the city, the watchman waketh but in vain." Psal. cxxvii. 1. Thou, oh my love, wast my faithful keeper, who didst continually defend my heart against all sorts of enemies, preventing the least faults, or correcting them when vivacity had occasioned their being committed. But alas! my dear Love, when thou ceased to watch for me, or left me to myself, how weak was I, and how easily did my enemies prevail over me! Let others ascribe their victories to their own fidelity. As for me, I shall never attribute them to any thing else than thy paternal care over me. I have too often experienced, to my cost, what I should be without thee, to presume in the least

least on any cares of my own. It is to thee, and to thee only, that I owe every thing, oh my deliverer; and my being indebted to thee for it gives me infinite joy.

WHILE I was at Paris, I relaxed in my usual exercises, on account of the little time I had. and the dryness and distress which had seized my heart, the hand which sustained me being hid, and my beloved withdrawn. I did many things which I should not; for I knew the extreme fondness which some had for me, and suffered them to express it without checking it as I ought. I fell into other faults too, as having my neck a little too bare, though not near so much as others had. I wept bitterly because I plainly saw I was too remiss; and that was my torment. I sought all about for him who had secretly inflamed my heart. I enquired for tidings of him. But alas! hardly any body knew him. I cryed, "Oh thou best beloved of - "my soul! hadst thou been near me these "disasters had not befallen me. Tell me where " thou feedest, where thou makest thy flock to rest "at noon, in the bright day of eternity, which is "not, like the day of time, subject to night and "eclipses?" When I say, that I spoke thus to him it is but to explain myself. In reality it all passed almost in silence, for I could not speak. My heart had a language which was carried on without the sound of words, understood of its well-beloved, as he understands the language of the Word ever eloquent, which speaks incessantly in the innermost of the soul. Oh sacred language! which experience only gives the comprehension of! Let not any think it a barren language, an effect of the mere imagination. Far different, it is the silent expression of the

Word in the soul. As he never ceases to speak, so he never ceases to operate. Divit & Facta sunt. He effects in the soul what he speaks in it. This is a substantial expressive word, which operates infinitely more than all that one can conceive: It continues for ever fixed and unchangeable, a word which is comprehended of him, in whom it is spoken, only by its effects. This ineffable word communicates to the soul, in which it resides, a facility of speaking without words; the language of the blessed in heaven; well understood among congenial spirits, even without the medium of words, diffusing among them the union of grace, peace, and sweetness; and productive of such benefits as nothing but experience can declare. Oh if souls were pure enough, they would thus participate before hand the language of heaven.

But this no creature can procure of itself; for its silence, being only from its own efforts, would not have the effect of the grace which I am speaking of, not having the same principle. If people once came to know the operations of God, in souls wholly resigned to his guiding, it would fill them with reverential admiration and awe.

To return to my subject, from which I have departed, to follow the impetuosity of the spirit which makes me write, which will be likely to happen to me sometimes; (wherefore, sir, I beg you to excuse the irregularity of this history which you have required of me, not being in a condition to write otherwise.)

As I saw that the purity of my state was like to be sullied by too great a commerce with the creatures,

to

creatures. I made haste to finish what detained me at Paris, in order to return to the country. Tis true, Oh my God, I felt that thou hadst given me strength enough to avoid the occasions of evil-but when I had so far yielded as to get into them, I found I could not resist the vain complaisances, and a number of other foibles which they ensuared me into. The pain which I felt after my faults was inexpressible. it was not an anguish that arose from any distinct idea or conception, from any particular motive or affection-but a kind of devouring fire which ceased not, till the fault was consumed and the soul purified by it. It was a banishment of my soul from the presence of its beloved, its bridegroom. I could have no access to him, neither could I have any rest out of him, I knew not what to do. I was like the dove out of the ark, which finding no rest for the sole of her foot, was constrained to return to the ark; but, finding the window shut, could only fly about and about it. In the mean time, through an infidelity which will for ever render me culpable, I strove to find some satisfactions without, but could not. This essay served to convince me of my folly, and of the vanity of those pleasures which are called innocent. When I was prevailed on to taste them, I felt a strong repulse, which, joined with my remorse for the transgression, changed the diversion into torment. "Oh my Gop! said I, this is not thee; "and nothing else, beside thee, can give solid " pleasure."

ONE day, as much through unfaithfulness as complaisance, I went to take a turn at some of the public walks, rather from excess of vanity to shew myself there, than to take the pleasure of the place. Oh my Gop! How didst thou make me sensible of this fault? But far from punishing me in letting me partake of the amusement, thou didst it in holding me so close to thyself, that I could give no attention to any thing but my fault and thy displeasure. this I was invited with some other Ladies to an entertainment at St. Cloud, through vanity and weak compliance, I yielded and went. regale was very magnificent; they, though wise in the eye of the world, could relish it; but as to me it was filled with bitterness. I could eat nothing, I could enjoy nothing, my disquiet appeared on my countenance. Oh, what tears did it cost me! For above three months my Beloved withdrew his favouring presence, and I could see nothing but an angry God for me.

I was on this occasion, and in another journey which I took with my husband into *Touraine*, before I fell into the small-pox, like those animals destined for slaughter, which on certain days they adorn with greens and flowers, and bring in pomp into the city, before they kill them; this weak beauty, on the eve of its decline, shone forth in new brightness, in order to become the sooner extinct.

ONE day as I walked to church, followed by a footman—in crossing a bridge I was met by a poor man; I went to give him alms, he thanked me but refused them, and then spoke to me in a wonderful manner of God and divine things; he displayed to me my whole heart—my love to God, my Charity, my too great fondness for my beauty, and all my faults; he told me 'twas not enough to avoid hell, but that God required of me the utmost purity and height of perfection.

My

-My heart assented to his reproofs—I heard him with silence and respect—his words penetrated my very soul, when I arrived at Church I fainted away; but have never seen the man since.

CHAP. XIV.

FTER this, my husband enjoying some intermission of his almost continual ailments, had a mind to go to Orleans, and from thence into Touraine. In this journey my vanity made its last blaze. I received abundance of visits and applauses. But how clearly did I perceive the folly of men who are so taken with vain beauty! I disliked the passion, yet not that in myself which caused it, though I sometimes ardently desired to be delivered from it. The continual combat of nature and grace cost me no small affliction. Nature was pleased with public applause; but grace made me dread it. What augmented the temptation was, that they esteemed in me virtue, joined with youth and beauty; not knowing that all the virtue was only in God, and his protection, and all the weakness in myself.

I went in search of confessors, to accuse myself of my failings, and to bewail my backslidings: But they were utterly insensible of my pain. They esteemed what God condemned. They They treated as a virtue what to me appeared detestable in thy sight. Far from measuring my faults by thy graces, they only considered what I was, in comparison of what I might have been: Hence, instead of blaming me, they only flattered my pride, and justified me in what incurred thy rebuke; or only treated as a slight fault what in me was highly displeasing to thee, from whom I had received such signal mercies.

THE heinousness of sins is not to be measured singly by their nature, but also by the state of the person who commits them; as the least unfaithfulness in a spouse is more injurious to her husband, than far greater ones in his domestics. I told them all the trouble I had been under, for not having entirely covered my neck; though it was covered much more than by other women of my age. They assured me that I was very modestly dressed; and as my husband liked my dress, there could be nothing amiss in it. inward director taught me quite the contrary; but I had not courage enough to follow him, and to dress myself differently from others, at my age. Beside, my vanity furnished me with pretences seemingly just, for following the mode. Oh, if Pastors knew what hurt they do in humouring female vanity, they would be more severe against it. Had I but found one honest enough to deal plainly with me, I should not have gone on thus; no, not for a moment. But my vanity, siding with the declared opinion of others, induced me to think them in the right, and my own scruples to be only mere fancy.

WE met with accidents in this journey, sufficient to have terrified any one, and though corrupt nature prevailed so far as I have just men-

mentioned, yet my resignation to God was so strong, that I passed fearless, even where there was apparently no possibility of escape. At one time we got into a narrow pass, and did not perceive, until we were too far advanced to draw back, that the road was undermined by the river Loire, which ran beneath, and the banks had fallen in; so that in some places the footmen were obliged to support one side of the carriage. All around me were terrified to the highest degree, yet God kept me perfectly tranquil, and I secretly rejoiced in the prospect of losing my life by a singular stroke of his providence. During this journey, I sometimes was faulty in indulging my sight with rare and curious objects.

On my return, I went to see Mrs. Granger, to whom I related how it had been with me while abroad. She strengthened and encouraged me to pursue my first design, and she advised me to cover my neck entirely, which I have done ever since, notwithstanding the singularity of it.

God who had so long deferred the chastisement merited by such a series of infidelity, now began to punish me with double rigour for the abuse of his grace. Sometimes I wished to retire to a convent, and thought it lawful, as I judged it impossible to correspond so fully with the divine operations, whilst engaged in worldly matters. I found wherein I was weak, and that my faults were always of the same nature; it was therefore I sought so ardently to shun the occasion. I wished to hide myself in some cave, or to be confined in a dreary prison, rather than enjoy a liberty by which I suffered so much. Divine Love gently drew me inward, and vanity dragged me outward, and my heart

They treated as a virtue whe detestable in thy sight. Far faults by thy graces, they or I was, in comparison of who Hence, instead of blaming tered my pride, and justific thy rebuke; or only trea what in me was highly diwhom I had received su

THE heinousness of singly by their nature the person who comm faithfulness in a spoc husband, than far I told them all the: not having entire it was covered me of my age. The modestly dressed dress, there couinward director . but I had not and to dress my age. las pretences sec: Oh, if Paster mouring fear severe again enough ' have gon my var others. and mg

Windicies '
corrupt

and beiner Lorun inder

we me of powertnt. 2:01 strongust duplicity se forth when sain returned to ्रान्य अ upbraiding urnis, and gave vhich filled me sections on my of-.... vanity was still ... ir was such, that .. nterests, so to and my own, and 🔔 🔞 mself justice upon _ ict and of love, and wiending him, who ...v upon me. That wuld offend him by ... but that a heart ... :tself, and so fully is heart should be which it detests, is a cauered inexpressibly ance.

with attention, he ward, nothing but goodness, are part, nothing but lift there be any of my God! As for

I have nothing to glory in but my infirand my unworthiness, since, in that everng marriage-union thou hast made with me, but weakness, sin and misery. Oh my Love! How I rejoice to ... e all to thee, and that thou favourest my heart with a sight of the treasures and boundless riches of thy grace and love! Thou hast dealt by me, as if a magnificent king should marry a poor slave, forget her slavery, give her all the ornaments which may render het pleasing in his eyes, and freely pardon her all the faults and ill qualities which her ignorance and bad education had given her. This thou hast made my case. My poverty is become my riches, and in the extremity of my weakness I have found my strength. Oh if any knew, with what confusion the indulgent favours of God cover the soul after its faults!—'tis inconceivable! Such a soul would wish with all its power, to satisfy the divine justice.—I made verses and little songs to bewail myself. I exercised austerities, but they did not satisfy my heart. They were like those drops of water which only serve to make the fire hotter. When I take a view of God, and myself, I am obliged to cry out, "Oh admirable "conduct of Love toward an ungrateful wretch! "Oh horrible ingratitude toward such un-"paralleled goodness!" A great part of my life is only a mixture of such things as might be enough to sink me to the grave betwixt grief and love!

CHAP. XV.

N my arrival at home, I found my husband seized with the gout, and his other complaints; my little daughter ill, and like to die of the small-pox; my eldest son too, took it, and had such a vast quantity, and of so malignant a nature, that it rendered him as disfigured. as before he had been beautiful. As soon as I perceived the small-pox was in the house, I had no doubt but I should take it. Mrs. GRANGER advised me timely to remove, if I could. father offered to take me home, with my second son, whom I tenderly loved. But my motherin-law would not suffer it. She persuaded my husband it was useless, and sent for a physician, who seconded her in it, saying, "I should as " readily take it at a distance as here, if I were "disposed to take it." I may say, she proved at that time a second Jephtha, and that she sacrificed us both, though innocently. Had she known what followed, I doubt not but she would have acted otherwise. All the town stirred in this affair. Every one begged her to send me out of the house, and cried out that it was cruel to expose me thus. They set upon me too, imagining I was unwilling to go; for I had not told that she was so averse to it. I had at that time no other disposition, than to sacrifice myself to divine Providence; and though I might have removed, notwithstanding my mother's resistance, yet I would not without her consent; because it looked to me, as if her registance was an order of Heaven. Oh divine will of my Goo! Thou wast then my only life, in the midst of all my miseries. I con-

I CONTINUED in this spirit of sacrifice to Gop. waiting from moment to moment in an entireresignation, for whatever he should be pleased to ordain. I cannot express what nature suffered; for I was like one who sees both certain death and an easy remedy, without being able to avoid the former, or try the latter. I had no less apprehension for my younger son than for myself: My mother-in-law so excessively doated on the eldest, that the rest of us were indifferent to her: Yet I am assured, if she had known that the younger would have died of the small pox, she would not have acted as she did. Gop makes use of creatures, and their natural inclinations, to accomplish his designs. When I see in the creatures a conduct which appears unreasonable and mortifying, I mount higher, and look upon them as instruments both of the justice and mercy of GoD; for his justice is full of mercy.

WHEN I told my husband that my stomach was sick, and that I was taking the small-pox; he said, it was only imagination. I let Mrs. GRANGER know the situation I was in. As she had a tender heart, she was affected by the treatment I met with, and encouraged me to offer myself up to the Lord. At length, nature finding there was no resource, consented to the sacrifice which my spirit had already made. The disorder gained ground apace, I was seized with a great shivering, and a pain both in my head and stomach. They would not yet believe that I was sick, but in a few hours itwent so far, that they thought my life in danger; for I was also taken with an inflammation on my lungs, and the remedies for the one disorder were contrary to the other. My mother-

iu-law's favorite physician was not in town, nor the resident surgeon. Another surgeon was went for, who said, "I must be bled;" but my mother-in-law would not suffer it at that time So little attendance was paid me. to be done. that I was on the point of death for want of My husband, not being able proper assistance. to ace me, left me entirely to his mother. would not allow any physician but her own to prescribe for me, and yet did not send for him, though he was within a day's journey of us. this extremity I opened not my mouth to request any succour. I looked for life or death from the hand of God, without testifying the least umasiness at such extraordinary conduct. The power I enjoyed within, on account of that perfect resignation, in which God kept me by his grace, was so great, that it made me forget myself, in the midst of such violent and oppressive disorders.

HUT Gon's protection was indeed wonderful. How oft have I been reduced to extremity, yet he never failed to succour, when things appeared most desperate. It pleased him so to order it, that a skilful surgeon, who had attendin the before, passing by our house, enquired after me. They told him I was extremely ill. He alighted immediately, and came in to see Never was man more surprised, when he MAN the frightful condition I was in. amall pax, which could not come out, had fallen ou my now with such force, that it was quite black. He thought there had been a gangrene in it, and that it was going to fall off. My eyes were take two coals; but I was no ways alarmed: in at that time, I could have made a sacrifice w all things, and was pleased that God should

avenge himself on that face, which had betrayed me into so many infidelities. He was so affrighted that he could not hide his surprise, and went into my mother-in-law's chamber, and told her, "it was most shameful to "let me die in that manner, for want of bleed-"ing." She still opposed it so violently, that in short she told him flatly, "she would not " suffer it, until the physician returned." He flew into such a rage, at seeing me thus left without sending for the physician, that he reproved my mother-in-law in the severest manner; but all in vain still. Upon that he came up again presently into my chamber, and said, "If you choose, I will bleed you, and save "vour life." I held out my arm to him; and, though it was extremely swelled, he bled me in an instant. My mother-in-law was in a violent passion about it. The small-pox came out immediately; and he ordered that they should get me bled again in the evening, but she would not suffer it, and for fear of displeasing my mother-in-law, and through a total resignation of myself into the hands of God, I durst not retain him, whatever occasion, I had for it.

I AM the more particular in this relation, to shew how advantageous it is to resign one's self to God without reserve. Though in appearance he leaves us for a time, to prove and exercise our faith, yet he never fails us, when our need of him is the more pressing: One may say with Scripture, "It is God who bringeth down to "the gates of death, and raiseth up again." The blackness and swelling of my nose went off, and I believe, had they continued to bleed me, I had been pretty easy; but for want of that I grew worse

number again. The malady fell into my eyes, and muanical them with such severe pain, that I mount I should lose them both.

I HAD those violent pains for three weeks. saming which I got very little sleep. I could not said my eyes, they were so full of the smallwax, nor open them by reason of the pain I There was the greatest probability and I should lose my sight, but I was wholly econciled to the loss; my throat, palate, and tums were likewise so filled with the pock, that . could not swallow broth, or take any nourishment, without suffering extremely. My whole wix looked like that of a leper. All that saw me will, they had never seen such a shocking westerde. But as to my soul, it was kept in a The hopes contentment not to be expressed. we realiberty, by the loss of that beauty, which wind requently brought me under bondage, cusicised me so well satisfied, and so united to that I would not have changed my conway in that of the most happy prince in the wa'isli.

The constant of the sympathy in my sad their sympathy in my sad the passions of men. I praised the same that any the same will be constant the only thing that I said was, the constant of the only thing that I said was, the same the only thing that I said was, the same the only thing that I said was, the same th

fessor who had been dissatisfied with me before, came to see me. He asked me if I was not sorry for having the small-pox; and he now taxed me with pride for my answer.

My youngest little boy took the distemper the same day with myself, and died for want of care. This blow indeed struck me to the heart, but yet, drawing strength from my weakness, I offered him up, and said to God as Job did, "Thou gavest him to me, and thou takest him " from me. Blessed be thy holy name." The spirit of sacrifice possessed me so strongly, that, though I loved this child tenderly, I never shed a tear at hearing of his death. The day he was buried, the doctor sent to tell me he had not placed a tombstone upon his grave, because my little girl could not survive him two days. My eldest son was not yet out of danger, so that I saw myself stripped of all my children at once. my husband indisposed, and myself extremely so. God did not take my little girl then. He prolonged her life some years, to make the loss, more painful to me.

At last my mother-in-law's physician arrived, at a time wherein he could be but of little service to me. When he saw the strange inflammation in my eyes he bled me several times; but it was too late. And those bleedings which would have been so proper at first, did nothing but weaken me now. They could not even bleed me in the condition I was in, but with the greatest difficulty; for my arms were so swelled, that the surgeon was obliged to push in the lance to a great depth. Moreover the bleeding being out of season had like to have caused my death, this I confess would have

been very agreeable to me. I looked upon death as the greatest blessing for me. Yet I saw well I had nothing to hope on that side; and that, instead of meeting with so desirable an event, I must prepare myself to support the trials of life

AFTER my eldest son was grown better, he got up and came into my chamber. I was surprized at the extraordinary change I saw in him. His face, lately so fair and beautiful, was become like a coarse spot of earth, all full of furrows. That gave me the curiosity to view myself in the looking-glass. I felt myself shocked, for I saw that God had ordered the sacrifice in all its reality.

Some things now fell out by the contrariety of my mother-in-law, that caused me severe crosses, and put the finishing stroke to my son's face. However, my heart was firm in my God, and strengthened itself by the number and greatness of my sufferings.—I was as a victim incessantly offered upon the altar, to Him who first had sacrificed himself for love.—What shall I render to the Lord, for all his benefits towards me? I will take the cup of salvation, and call upon the name of the Lord. These words, I can truly say, Oh my God, have been the delight of my heart, and have had their effect on me, through my whole life; for I have been continually heaped with thy blessings, and thy cross. My principal attraction, besides that of suffering for thee, has been to yield myself up without resistance, interiorly and exteriorly, to all thy divine disposals; and these gifts which I was favoured with from the beginning, have continued and encreased until now-for thou hast thyself

thyself guided my continual crosses, and led me through paths impenetrable to all but thee.

They sent me pomatums to recover my complexion, and to fill up the hollows of the smallpox. I had seen wonderful effects from it upon others, and therefore at first had a mind to try them: But love, jealous of his work, would not suffer it. There was a voice in my heart which said, "If I would have had thee fair, I should have left thee as thou wert." I was therefore obliged to lay aside every remedy, and to go into the air, which made the pitting worse, and to expose myself in the streets to the eyes of every one, when the redness of the small-pox was at the worst, in order to make my humiliation triumph, where I had exalted my pride.

My husband kept his bed almost all that time, and made good use of his indisposition. Only as he now lost that, which before had given him so much pleasure in viewing me, he grew much more susceptible of impressions which any gave him against me. In consequence of this, the persons who spoke to him to my disadvantage, finding themselves now better hearkened to, spoke more boldly and more frequently. There was only thou, oh my God, who changed not for me. Thou redoubled thy interior graces, in proportion as thou augmented my exterior crosses.

CHAP. XVI.

111 waiting-maid became every day more And, as the devil incited her that her scoldings and received not now torment me, she thought. i we could hunder me from going to the commanners six should give me the greatest of all was not mistaken, oh divine was a pure wals, since the only satisfaction we have to receive and to honour thee. I medical as much as was in my power, the there we be well adorned. I gave every included it is the fundamental had, to furnish them with summers and contributed to the utmost extent is an abilities, to make them have silver plates "Oh my Love, I cried, let me In Nation! Spare nothing to annihilate t kelt an inexpressible longing to be thing equipment, and to become, as it were, a 160,43:546

thin girl then knew my affection for the wind weath, where, when I could have lihis in I passed several hours on my knees*.
It was it in her head to watch me daily.
It is the discovered my going thither, she ran
in it is most ber in-law and my husband. There
in it is much to chagrin them. Their inincident in the whole day. If a word escaped
in it may the instification, it was enough to

The graphical third and France are commonly open, and the graphical third init, so that persons have continually a graphical and management, and performing their decision of graphical make

make them say, I was guilty of sacrilege, and to raise an outcry against all devotion. If I made them no answer at all, they still heightened their indignation, and made them say the most grating things they could devise. If I fell sick, which often happened, they took occasion to come to quarrel with me in my bed, saying, my communions and prayers were what made me sick; as if there had been nothing else could make me ill, but my devotions to thee, oh my Love!—

SHE told me one day, in her passion, that she was going to write to him who she thought was my director, to get him to stop me from going to the communion, for that he did not know me. And when I made her no answer, she cried out as loud as she could, "that I treated her ill and "despised her." When I went out to go to prayers, (though I had taken care before to order every thing about the house) she ran to tell my husband that "I was going abroad, and had "left nothing in order." When I returned home, rage fell on me in all its violence; they would hear none of my reasons, but said, "they were "all a pack of lies." My mother-in-law persuaded my husband, "that I let every thing go "to wreck, and that, if she did not take care, "he would be ruined." He believed it, and I bore all with patience, endeavouring, as well as I could, to do my duty. What gave most trouble was the not knowing what course to take; for when I ordered any thing without her, she complained "that I shewed her no respect, that I did "things of my own head, and they were done "always the worse for it." Then she would order them quite contrary: If I consulted her to know what, or how she would have any thing to

as have the care an

. Viat I found in the . and submission to was they might be. · words and actions They chid me all epeating, and harp-Lie things, and that How often have I gars, which were inminal in the world! amn'd; as if the tears which surely they . inguish. If I recited ... they would render me and of it. If I kept silence, matempt and perverseness; . . thout telling it, that was then they said, "I had they tormented me for without giving me a little rest." I made . Gon so closely possessed allow me to seek relief . . . ven by a look. Some-... "Oh, that I had but any ... notice of me, or to whom wyself, what relief to me a was not granted me.

it was a most sensible modeed a punishment more the severest trials—I then st. St. Theresa says, "let me "suffer

ffer or die." For this absence of the cross, so grievous to me, that I languished with ardency of desire for its return.—But no er was this earnest longing granted, and blessed cross returned again, than strange as ay seem, it appeared so weighty and bursome, as to be almost insupportable.

THOUGH I loved my father extremely, and he ed me very tenderly, yet I never spoke to him by sufferings. One of my relations, who loved much, perceived the little moderation they and towards me. They spoke very roughly to before him. He was highly displeased, and d my father of it, adding, that I should pass a fool. Soon after I went to see my father, ho, contrary to his custom, sharply reprimandme, "for suffering them to treat me in such a manner, without saying any thing in my own defence, adding, every one talk'd of me for it; that it looked as if I had neither sense or spirit "to vindicate myself." I answered, "If they remarked what my husband said to me, that was confusion enough for me without my bring-"ing any more of it on myself by replies; that if "they did not remark it, I ought not to cause it "to be observed, nor expose my husband's weak-" ness; that remaining silent stopped all dis-" putes, whereas I might cause them to be con-"tinued and increased, by my replies." My father answered, "I did well, and that I should "continue to act as Gop should inspire me:" And after that, he never spoke to me of it any more.

THEY were ever talking to me against my father, whom I most tenderly loved and respected; against my relations, and all such as I esteemed

esteemed most. I felt this more keenly than all they could say against myself. I could not forbear defending them, and therein I did wrong: as whatever I said served only to provoke them. If any complained of my father or relations, they were always in the right. If any, whom they had disliked before, spoke against them, they were presently approved of. If any shewed friendship to me, such were not welcome. relation whom I greatly loved for her piety, coming to see me, they openly bid her be gone, or treated her in such a manner as obliged her to it, which gave me no small uneasiness. When any considerable person came, they would be speaking against me; even to persons who knew me not, which surprized them: But when

they saw me they pitied me.

WHATEVER they said against me, love would not allow me to justify myself. I spoke not to my husband of what either my mother-in-law or the girl did to me, except the first year, when I was not sufficiently touched with the power of God, to suffer such treatment. Nay, I did more than this; for as my mother-in-law and my husband were both passionate, they often quarrelled. Then I was in favour, and to me they made their mutual complaints. I never told the one what the other had said. though it might have been of service to me, humanly speaking, to take the advantage of auch opportunities, I never made use of them to complain of either: Nay, on the contrary, I did not rest till I had reconciled them. I spoke many obliging things of the one to the other which always made them friends again: though I knew by frequent experience that I should pay clear for their re-union: For scarce were they reconciled, but they joined together against me.

I was so deeply engaged within, as often to forget things without, yet not any thing which was of consequence. My husband was hasty, and this inattention frequently irritated him. walked into the garden, without observing any thing there: And when my husband, who could not go thither, asked me about it, I knew not what to say, at which he was angry. I went thither on purpose to remark every thing in order to tell him about them; and yet when there, did not think of looking at them. I went ten times one day, to see and bring him an account of them, and yet still forgot it. But when I did remember to look at them, I was much pleased; yet it generally happened I was then asked nothing about them.

When they were telling any news, to mortify my curiosity, I used, under some pretext or other, to retire. When my husband afterward would be talking to me about it, I betrayed my ignorance of the matter, and then put him into a fresh fit of rage against me, which I would gladly have avoided being the occasion of; as I was very desirous of doing my duty, and rendering every thing agreeable to him, so far as was in my power.

ALL my crosses would have seemed little to me if I might have had liberty to pray, and to be alone, to indulge the interior attention which I felt.—But I was obliged still to continue in their presence with such a subjection as is scarcely conceivable. My husband looked on his watch, if at any time I had liberty allowed me for prayer, to see if I stayed above half an hour. If I exceeded it, he grew very uneasy. Sometimes I said to him, "Grant me

"a mind." And though he would have granted it to me for other diversions, yet for prayer he would not. I confess inexperience caused me much trouble, and I have often thereby given occasion for what they made me suffer: For ought I not to have looked on my captivity as an effect of the will of my God, to content myself therein, and to make it my only desire and prayer? But I often fell back again into the anxiety of wishing to get time for prayer; which was not agreeable to my husband. It is true those faults were more frequent in the beginning. Afterwards I prayed to God in his own retreat, in the temple of my heart, and then I went out no more.

CHAP. XVII.

WE went into the country, where I committed many faults, letting myself go too much after my inward attraction. I thought I might do it then because my husband diverted himself with building. If I stayed from him any time he was dissatisfied, which sometimes happened, as he was continually talking with the workmen. I set myself in a corner, and there had my work with me, but could scarce do any thing by reason of the force of the attraction which made the work fall out of my hands. I passed whole hours this way, without being able either to open my eyes or know what passed in

me; but I had nothing to wish for, nor yet to be afraid of. Every where I found my proper centre, because every where I found Gop.

My heart could then desire nothing but what it had; for this disposition extinguished all its desires; and I sometimes said to myself, "What "wantest thou? What fearest thou?" And I was surprized to find upon trial that I had nothing to fear. Every place I was in was my proper place.

As I had generally no time allowed me for prayer but with difficulty, and would not be suffered to rise till seven o'clock, my bed being in my husband's room on account of his illness-I stole up at four, and kneeling in my bed continued there while he thought me asleep, for I wished not to offend him, and strove to be punctual and assiduous in every thing.—But this soon affected my health and injured my eyes, which were still very weak, it being but eight months since I had the small-pox.—This loss of rest brought a heavy trial on me, for as even my sleeping hours were much broken, by the fear of not waking in time—I insensibly dropt asleep at my prayers, even the half hour that I got after dinner, though I felt quite wakeful yet drowsiness overpowered me. I endeavoured to remedy this by the severest bodily inflictions, but in vain.

As we had not yet built the chapel, and were far from any church, I could not go to prayers or Sacrament, without the permission of my husband—and he was very reluctant to suffer me except on Sundays and holydays—I could not go out in the coach, so that I was obliged to make

make use of some stratagems, and to get service performed very early in the morning, to which feeble as I was I made a shift to creep on foot. although it was a quarter of a league distance. And really God wrought wonders for me: For generally, in the mornings when I went to prayers, my husband did not wake till after I was returned: Often, as I was going out, the weather was so cloudy, that the girl I took with me, told me, "I could not go; or if I did, I "should be soaked with the rain." I answered her with my usual confidence, "God will assist "us." I generally reached the chapel without being wet: When got thither, the rain fell excessively. When I returned it ceased. When I got home it began again with fresh violence. During several years that I have acted this wav. I have never been deceived in my confidence. When I was in town, and could find nobody up, to be seen, I was surprized that there came to me priests to ask me if I was willing to freceive the communion, and that if I was they would give it to me. I had no mind to refuse. oh my Love, the opportunity which thou thyself offeredst me; for I had no doubt of its being thee who inspired them to propose it. had contrived to get divine service at the chapel I have mentioned, I have often suddenly awaked with a strong impulse to go to prayers. maid would say to me, "But, madam, you are "going to tire yourself in vain. There will be "no service there." For that chapel was not vet regularly served: However I went full of faith, and at my arrival have found them just ready to begin. If I could particularly enumerate the remarkable providences, which were hereupon given in my favour, there would be enough to fill whole volumes with. When

WHEN I wanted to hear from, or write to, Mother Granger, I often felt a strong propensity to go to the door. There I found a messenger with a letter from her, which could not have fallen into my hands but for that. But this is only a small instance of these kind of continual providences. She was the only person I could be free to lay open my state to, when I could get to see her, which was with the greatest difficulty; and through providential assistance; having not only been prohibited by my confessor and husband, but all means, that could be devised, were put in practice by my motherin-law to prevent it. I placed an extreme confidence in Mother GRANGER. I concealed nothing from her, either of my sins or my pains. I would not have done the least thing without telling her. I did not now practise any austerities but those she was willing to allow me. There was nothing which I kept from her but my interior dispositions, these I was scarce able to tell, because I knew not how to explain myself thereon, being very ignorant of those matters, having never read or heard of them.

ONE day when they thought I was going to see my father, I ran off to Mother GRANGER. It was discovered, and cost me such crosses as I cannot express; their rage against me was so excessive that it would be incredible, even my writing to her was extremely difficult. For as I had the utmost abhorrence of a lie, I forbad the footmen to tell any. When they were met they were asked whither they were going, and if they had not any letters. My mother-in-law set herself in a little passage, through which those who went out must necessarily pass by her. She asked them whither they were going and what

they carried. Sometimes going on foot to the Benedictines, I caused shoes to be carried, that they might not perceive by the dirty ones that I had been far. I durst not go alone; and those who attended me had orders to tell every place I went to. If they were discovered to fail in doing it, they were either corrected or turned out of their service.

My husband and mother-in-law were always inveighing against that good woman, though in reality they esteemed her. I sometimes made my own complaint to her; and she replied, "How "should you content them, when I have been doing all in my power for these twenty years "to satisfy them without success?" For as my mother-in-law had two daughters under her care, she was always finding something to say against every thing she did in regard to them.

But the most sensible cross to me now was the revolting of my own son against me, whom they inspired with so great a contempt for me, that I could not bear to see him without extreme affliction. When I was in my chamber with some of my friends they sent him to listen to what we said; and as he saw this pleased them he invented a hundred things to tell them. What gave me the severest pang was the loss of my child. If I caught him in a lie, as frequently I did, he would upbraid me, saying, "My grandmother says, you "have been a greater liar than I." I answered him, "Therefore I know the deformity of that "vice, and how hard a thing it is to get the " better of it: And for this reason, I would not "have you suffer the like." He spoke to me things very offensive; and because he remarked the awe I stood in of his grandmother and his father,

father, if in their absence I found fault with him for any thing, he insultingly upbraided me, and said, "That now I wanted to set up for his "mistress, because they were not there." All this they approved of, in so much as to strengthen him in his most perverse inclinations. One day he went to see my father, and rashly began talking against me to him, as he was used to do to his grandmother. But there it did not meet with the same recompence. It affected my father to tears: he came to our house to desire he might be corrected for it. They promised it should be done, and yet they never did it. I was grievously afraid of the consequences of so bad an education. I told Mother GRANGER of it, who consoled me, and said, "That since I "could not remedy it, I must suffer and leave "every thing to Goo; and that this child " would be my cross."

ANOTHER great cross was the difficulty I had in attending my husband. I knew he was displeased when I was not with him; and yet when I was with him, he never expressed any pleasure in it, nor at any thing I did. On the contrary, he only rejected with scorn whatever office I performed. He was so very uneasy with me about every thing, that I sometimes trembled when I approached him. I could do nothing to his liking; and when I did not attend him, he was angry. He had taken such a dislike to soups, that he could not bear the sight of them; and those that offered them had so rough a reception, that neither his mother nor any of the domestics would carry them to him. There was none but I who did not refuse that office. I brought them to him, and let his anger pass; then tried in some agreeable manner to prevail on him to take take them. And when his passion increased, I waited with patience, after which I said to him, "I had rather be reprimanded several times a "day, than let you suffer by not bringing you "what is proper." Sometimes he took them; at other times pushed them back. But as he saw my perseverance, he would at length submit to take them.

When he was in good humour, and I was carrying something agreeable to him, then my mother-in-law would snatch it out of my hands, and carry it herself. And as he thought I was not so careful and studious to please him, he would fly in a rage against me, and express great thankfulness to his mother. I silently suffered it all: I used all my skill and endeavours to gain my mother-in-law's favour by my assiduities, my presents, my services; but was not lucky enough to succeed. How bitter and grievous, oh my God, would such a life be were it not for thee? But thou hast sweetened and reconciled it to me. I had a few very short intervals from this severe and mortifying life; but these served only to make the reverses more keen and bitter.

CHAP. XVIII.

BOUT eight or nine months after my recovery from the small-pox, Father LA COMBE, passing by our house, brought me a letter from Father de la MOTTE,* recommending him to my esteem, and expressing the highest friendship for him. I hesitated much, for I was very loth to make new acquaintances, but the fear of offending my brother prevailed. After a short conversation we both desired a farther opportunity. I thought that he either loved God, or was disposed to love him, and I wished every body to love him. God had already made use of me for the conversion of three of his order. The strong desire he had of seeing me again induced him to come to our country-house, which was about half a league from the town. A little accident which happened opened a way for me to speak to him. As he was in discourse with my husband, who relished his company, he was taken ill, and retired into the garden. husband soon bade me go and see what was the matter with him. I went: He told me he had remarked in my countenance, a deep inwardness and presence of God, which had given him a strong desire of seeing me again: And God then assisted me to open to him the interior path of the soul, and conveyed so much grace to him through this poor channel, that he has owned to me since, that he went away, changed into

^{*} He was a Bernabite, half brother of Lady Guion, by the father, a malevolent, selfish ecclesiastic, as we shall see in the second and third parts.

God knows well, in the admirable economy he observes, how to render the crosses more weighty, conformable to the ability of the creature to bear them; giving them always something new and unexpected. Hereby my soul began to be more resigned, and to comprehend that the state of absence, and of wanting what I longed for, was in its turn, more profitable than that of always abounding: because this latter nourished self-love. If God did not act thus, the soul would never die to itself. That principle of self-love is so crafty and dangerous, that it cleaves to every thing.

What gave me most uneasiness, in this time of darkness and crucifixion, both within and without, was an inconceivable readiness to be quick and hasty. When any answer a little too lively escaped me, (which served not a little to humble me) they said, "I was fallen into a "mortal sin." A conduct no less rigorous than this was quite necessary for me; for I was so proud, passionate, and of a humour naturally thwarting, wanting always to carry matters my own way, and thinking my own reasons better than those of others; that, hadst thou, oh my God! spared the strokes of thy hammer, I should never have been formed to thy will, to be an instrument for thy use; for I was ridiculously vain. Applause rendered me intolerable. I praised my friends to excess, and blamed others without reason: But, the more criminal I have been, the more I am indebted to thee, and the less of any good can I attribute to myself. how blind are men who attribute to others the holiness that God gives them! I believe, my Goo, that thou hast had children, who under thy grace, owed much to their own fidelity; but

as for me, I owe all to thee; I glory to confess it; I cannot acknowledge it too much.

In acts of charity I was very assiduous. So great was my tenderness for the poor, that I wished to have supplied all their wants; I could not see their necessity, without reproaching myself for the plenty I enjoyed. I deprived myself of all I could to help them. The very best at my table was distributed among them. There were few of the poor where I lived, who did not partake of my liberality. It seemed as if thou hadst made me thy only Almoner there, for being refused by others, they came all to me. "Oh "my divine love !" I cried, "it is thy substance; "I am only the steward of it. I ought to dis-"tribute it according to thy will." I found means to relieve them without letting myself be known, because I had one who dispensed my alms privately. When there were families who were ashamed to take in this way, I sent it to them as if I owed them a debt. I clothed such as were naked, and caused young girls to be taught how to earn their livelihood, especially such as were handsome, to the end that being employed, and having whereon to live, they might not be under a temptation to throw themselves away. Gop made use of me to reclaim several from their disorderly lives; and there was one of beauty and distinction, who has since made a happy end. I went to visit the sick, to comfort them, to make their beds. I made ointments, dressed their wounds, buried their dead. I privately furnished tradesmen and mechanics wherewith to keep up their shops. My heart was much opened toward my fellowcreatures in distress: And few indeed could carry charity much farther than our Lord enabled

me to do, according to my state, both while married and since.

To purify me the more from the mixture I might make of his gifts with my own self-love, he gave me interior probations, which were very heavy. I began to experience an insupportable weight, in that very piety which had formerly been so easy and delightful to me; not that I did not love it extremely, but I found myself defective in that noble practice of it, to which I aspired. The more I loved it, the more I laboured to acquire what I saw I failed in. alas! I seemed continually to be overcome by that which was contrary to it. My heart, indeed, was detached from all sensual pleasures. For these several years past, it has seemed to me that my mind is so detached and absent from the body, that I do things as if I did them not. If I eat or refresh myself, it is done with such an absence, or separation, as I wonder at, and with an entire mortification of the keenness of sensation in all the natural functions.



CHAP. XIX.

TO resume the thread of my history, the smallpox had so much hurt one of my eyes, that it was feared I should lose it. The gland at the corner of my eye was much injured. An imposthume arose from time to time between the nose and the eye, which gave me exquisite pain till it was lanced. It swelled all my head to that degree, that I could not bear even a pillow. The least noise was an agony to me, though sometimes they made a great one in my chamber; and yet this was a precious time to me, for t wo reasons; the first, because I was left in bed alone, where I had a sweet retreat without interruption; the other, because it'answered the desire which I had after suffering, which desire was so great, that all the austerities of the body would have been but as a drop of water to quench so great a fire; and indeed the severities and rigours which I then exercised were extreme—but they appeased not at all this appetite for the cross .- For 'tis thou alone, Oh crucified Saviour, who canst frame the Cross truly effectual for the death of SELF. others bless themselves in their ease or gaiety, grandeur or pleasures, poor temporary heavens: As for me, my desires were all turned another way, even to the silent path of suffering for CHRIST, and to be united to him, through the mortification of all that was of nature in me. that my senses, appetites and will, being dead to these, might wholly live in him.

I obtained leave to go to Paris for the cure of my eye; and yet it was much more through the desire I had to see Monsieur Bertot, a man of profound experience, whom Mother Granger had lately assigned to me for my director. I went to take my leave of my father, who embraced me with peculiar tenderness, little thinking then that it would be our last adieu.

Paris was a place now no longer to be dreaded as in times past. The throngs only served to draw me into a deep recollection, and

the noise of the streets but augmented my inward prayer. I saw Monsieur Bertot, who did not prove of that service to me, which he would have done if I had then had the power to explain myself: but though I wished earnestly to hide nothing from him, yet God held me so close to himself, that I could tell him scarce any thing at all. As soon as I spoke to him every thing was vanished from my mind, so that I could remember nothing but some few faults which I told him. As I saw him very seldom. and nothing stayed in my recollection, and as I read of nothing any way resembling my case, I knew not how to open myself upon it. sides I desired to make nothing known, but the evil which was in me. Therefore Monsieur BERTOT knew me not till after his death. This was of great utility to me, for taking away every support, and making me truly die to myself.

I WENT to pass the ten days, from the Ascension to Whitsuntide, at an abbey four leagues from Paris, the Abbess of which had a particular friendship for me. Here my union with God seemed to be deeper and more continual, becoming always simple, but at the same time more close and intimate.

ONE day I awaked suddenly at four o'clock in the morning, with a strong impression on my mind, that my father was dead; and though at the same time my soul was in a very great contentment, yet my love for him affected it with sorrow, and my body with weakness. Under the strokes and daily troubles which befel me, my will was so subservient to thine, oh my God, that it appeared absolutely united to it.

There seemed indeed to be no will left in me but thine only. My own disappeared, and no desires, tendencies or inclinations were left, but to the one sole object of whatever was most pleasing to thee, be it what it would. If I had a will, it was in union with thine, as two well tuned lutes in concert: That which is not touched renders the same sound as that which is touched: It is but one and the same sound, one pure harmony. It is this union of the will which establishes in perfect peace. Yet though my own will was lost, as to its operations, I have found since, in the strange states I have been obliged to pass through, how much it had yet to cost me to have it totally lost, as to all its properties in all the circumstances, and whole extent thereof, in order that the soul should retain no more any interest or desire of its own. of either time or eternity, but only the interest of God alone, in the manner that is known to himself, and not in our way of conceiving. How many souls are there which think their own wills quite lost, while they are yet very far from it! They would find they still subsist, if they met with hard probations. Who is there who does not wish something for himself, either of interest, wealth, honour, pleasure, conveniency, liberty, &c.? And he who thinks his mind loose from all these objects, because he possesses them, would soon perceive his attachment to them, were he stripped of those he is possessed of. If there are found in a whole age three persons so dead to every thing, as to be utterly resigned to Providence without any exception, they may well pass for prodigies of grace. - As I am not mistress of what I write, I follow not any order:—But it makes little matter.

In the afternoon as I was with the Abbess, I told her I had strong presentiments of my father's death. Indeed I could hardly speak, I was so affected within, and enfeebled without. Presently came one to tell her that she was wanted in the parlour. It was a man that had rid post, and was come express, with an account from my husband that my father was ill. And as I afterwards found it held him only twelve hours, he therefore was by this time dead. Abbess returning, says, "Here is a letter from "your husband who writes that your father is "taken violently ill." I said to her, "he is "dead, I cannot have a doubt about it." I sent away to Paris immediately, to hire a coach, to go the sooner. Mine waited for me at the midway. I went off at nine o'clock at night, They said, "I was going to destroy myself," for I had no acquaintance with me; as I had sent away my maid to Paris, to put every thing in order there; and being in a religious house, I had no mind to keep any footmen with me there. The Abbess told me, "that since I thought my "father was dead, it would be rashness in me to "expose myself, and run the risque of my life "in that manner; that coaches could hardly " pass the way I was going, it being no beaten "road." I answered "That it was my indis-"pensable duty to go to assist my father, and "that I ought not, on a bare apprehension, to "exempt myself from it." I went then alone, abandoned to Providence, with people unknown. My weakness was so great, that I could hardly keep my seat in the coach, and yet I was often forced to alight, on account of dangerous spots in theroad.

In this way I was obliged, about midnight,

to cross a forest, notorious for murders and rob-The most intrepid dreaded it; but my resignation left me scarce any room to think at all about it.—Oh what fears and uneasiness does a resigned soul spare itself!—Thus all alone I arrived within five leagues of my own habitation, where I found my confessor who had opposed me, with one of my relations waiting for me. The sweet consolation I had enjoyed, when alone, was now interrupted. My confessor, ignorant of my state, restrained me intirely. My grief was of such a nature that I could not shed a tear. And I was ashamed to hear a thing which I knew but too well, without giving any exterior mark of grief. The inward and profound peace I enjoyed dawned on my countenance, and the state I was in did not permit me to speak, or to do such things as are usually expected from persons of piety. I could do nothing but love and be went.

I FOUND on my arrival at home, that my father was already buried, on account of the excessive heat. It was ten o'clock at myhi. All wore the habit of mourning.—I had travelled thirty leagues in a day and a night. As I was very weak, not having taken any nounshment, I was instantly put to bed.

ABOUT two o'clock in the morning, my has band got up, and having gone out of my chainber, he returned presently, crying out with all his might, "My daughter is dead."---She was my only daughter, as dearly beloved as truly lovely. She had so many graces both of body and mind conferred on her, that one must have been insensible not to have loved her. She had an extraordinary share of love to God. Often was she found in corners at prayer. As soon as

she perceived me at prayer, she came and joined me, and if she discovered that I had been at it without her, she would weep bitterly and cry, "Ah, mama, you pray but I don't."—When we were alone, and she saw my eyes closed—she'd whisper, "are you asleep," and then cry out, "Ah no, you are praying to our dear JESUS," and dropping on her knees before me, she would begin to pray too. She was several times whipt by her grandmother, because she said, "She "would never have any other husband but our "LORD," yet could she never make her say otherwise. She was innocent and modest as a little angel; very dutiful and endearing, and withal very beautiful. Her father doated on her, and to me she was very dear, much more for the qualities of her mind than those of her beautiful person. I looked upon her as my only: consolation on earth: For she had as much affection for me, as her brother had aversion and contempt. She died of an unseasonable bleeding: But what shall I say? she died by the hands of him, who was pleased, for wise reasons of his own, to strip me of all.

THERE now remained to me only the son of He fell ill to the point of death, my sorrow. but was restored at the prayer of Mother GRANGER, now my only consolation under God. I no more wept for my child than for my father. I could only say, "Thou, oh LORD, gave her "to me; it pleases thee to take her back again, "for she was thine." As for my father his virtue was so generally known, that I must rather be silent, than enter upon the subject. liance on God, his faith and patience were won-Both died in July 1672. derful. From henceforth crosses were not spared me: And though

I have had abundance of them hitherto, yet they were only the shadows of those which I have been since obliged to pass through, pursuant to a marriage contract, which I had newly entered into with our Lord Jesus Christ. In this spiritual marriage I claimed for my dowry only crosses, scourges, persecutions, ignominies, lowliness, and nothingness of self, which in his great goodness, and for wise ends, as I have seen, he has been pleased to grant and conferupon me.

One day being in great distress, on account of the redoubling of outward and inward crosses. I went into my closet to give vent to my grief. M. Bertor was brought into my mind, with this wish, Oh that he was sensible of what I suffer! Though he wrote but very seldom, and with great difficulty, yet he wrote me a letter, dated the same day, about the cross, the finest and most consolatory he ever wrote me on that Sometimes my spirit was so oppressed with continual crosses, which scarce gave me any relaxation, that when alone my eyes turned every way, to see if they could find any thing to give some relief. A word, a sigh, a trifle, or to know that any one took part in my grief, would have been some comfort; but that was not granted me, not even to look toward heaven, or make any complaint. Love held me then so close, that it would have this miserable nature to perish, without giving it any support or nourishment.

OH, my dearest LORD! thou yet gave my soul a victorious support, which made it triumph over all the weaknesses of *nature*, and seized thy knife to sacrifice *it* without sparing. And yet this

take me to the play, I refused to go; (as I never went to plays) making use of the pretext of my husband's continual indispositions. She pressed me exceedingly, and said, "I should not be "prevented by his sickness from taking some " amusement; and that I was not of an age "to be confined with the sick like a nurse." I told her my reasons for acting so by my husband. She then perceived that it was more from a principle of piety, than the indispositions of my husband, that I did not go. Insisting to know my sentiment of plays, I told her, "I en-"tirely disapproved of them, and especially for " a christian woman:" And as she was far more advanced in years than I was, what I then said made such an impression on her mind, that she never after went to them.

Being once with her and another lady, who was fond of talking, and had read the fathers, they spoke much of Gop. This lady spoke learnedly of him. I said scarce any thing, being inwardly drawn to silence, and troubled at such kind of conversation about God. My acquaintance came next day to see me, "The "LORD had so touched her heart, that she " could stand out no longer." I attributed this touch to something the other lady had spoken: But she said to me, "Your silence had some-"thing in it which penetrated to the bottom of "my soul: And I could not relish what the "other said." Then we spoke to one another with open hearts.

IT was then that God left indelible impressions of his grace on her soul, and she continued so athirst for him, that she could scarcely endure to converse on any other subject.

she might become wholly his, he deprived her of a most affectionate husband, and visited her by such severe crosses, and at the same time poured his grace so abundantly into her heart. that he soon became the sole master thereof. After the death of her husband, and the loss of most of her fortune, she went to reside four leagues from our house, on a small estate, which she yet had left. She obtained my husband's consent to my going to pass a week with her, to console her under her losses. God gave her by my means all she wanted. She had a great share of understanding, but was surprized at my expressing things to her so far above my natural capacity. I should have been surprized at it myself, had I reflected at it: But it was Gop who gave me the gift for her sake, diffusing a flood of grace into her soul, without regarding the unworthiness of the channel he was pleased to make use of. Since that time her soul has been the temple of the Holy Ghost, and our hearts have been indissolubly united.

My husband and I took a little journey together; in which both my resignation and humility were exercised, yet without difficulty or constraint, so powerful was the influence of divine grace. We had all like to have perished in a river: The rest of the company in a desperate fright threw themselves out of the coach which sunk in the moving sand. I continued so much inwardly occupied, that I did not once think of the danger. God delivered me from it without my thought of avoiding it. I was quite content to be drowned, had he permitted it. It may be said, "I was rash;" I believe I was so: Yet I rather chose to perish, trusting in God, than make my escape in a dependance on myself.

But what say I? We do not perish, but for want of trusting in him. My pleasure is to be indebted to him for every thing. This renders me content in my miseries, which I would rather endure all my life long, in a state of resignation to him, than put an end to them, in a dependance on myself. However, I would not advise others to act thus, unless they were in the same disposition which I was in at that time.

As my husband's maladies daily increased, he resolved to go to St. REINE; he appeared very desirous of having none but me with him, and told me one day, "If they never spoke to me "against you, I should be more easy, and you "more happy." In this journey I committed many faults of self-love and self-seeking; and being in a deep interior resignation, experienced thereby what I should be without thy fatherly care, oh Gop. For some time past, thou hadst withdrawn from me that sweet interior correspondence which before I had only to follow. I was become like a poor traveller that had lost his way in the night, and could find no way, path, or track: But as I reserve for another place the description of the terrible darkness through which I passed, I shall here continue the thread of my history. My husband in his return from St. REINE, passed by St. EDM. Having now no children but my first-born, who was often at the gates of death, he wished exceedingly for heirs, and prayed for them earnestly. God granted his desire, and gave me a second son. The approach of my lying-in was a season of great consolation to me. And though in my delivery I had a severe time, the love I had for the cross made me look on it all with pleasure. pleasure. I rejoiced because nature had so much to suffer. Besides, as I was several weeks, after my delivery, without any one daring to speak to me, on account of my great weakness, it was a time of retreat and of silence, wherein I tried to indemnify myself for the loss of time I had sustained in the others, to pray to thee, my God, and to continue alone with thee. I may say that during the nine months of my pregnancy, God took a new possession of me, and left me It was a time of continual joy without interruption. As I had experienced many inward difficulties, weaknesses and withdrawings of my Love, it was a new life. It seemed as if I was already in the fruition of beatitude. But how dear did this happy time cost me, since it was only a preparative to a total privation of comfort for several years, without any support or hope of return! It began with the death of Mrs. GRANGER, who had been my only consolation under God. Before my return from St. REINE I heard she was dead.

When I received this news, I confess it was the most afflicting stroke I had ever felt. I thought, had I been with her at her death, I might have spoke to her, and received her last instructions: But God has so ordered it that I was deprived of her assistance in almost all my losses, in order to render the strokes more painful. Some months indeed before her death, it was shewn to me, that though I could not see her but with extreme difficulty, and suffering for it, yet she was still some support to me: And the Lord let me know that it would be profitable for me to be deprived of her: But at the time she died I did not think so. It was in that trying season, when my paths were all blocked

up, she was taken from me, she who might have guided me in my lonesome and difficult road, bounded as it were with precipices, and entangled with briars and thorns.

OH adorable conduct of my Gop! There must be no guide for the person whom thou art leading into the regions of darkness and death; no conductor for the man whom thou art determined to destroy, (i. e. to cause to die totally to himself.) After having saved me with so much mercy, O my Love; after having led me by thy hand in rugged paths, it seems thou wast bent on my destruction. May it not be said that thou dost not save but to destroy, nor go to seek the lost sheep, but to cause it to be yet more lost; that thou art pleased in building what is demolished, and in demolishing what is built. Thus thou wouldst overturn the temple built by human endeavours, with so much care and industry—in order as it were miraculously to erect a divine structure—a house not built with hands, eternal in the heavens.—Oh secrets of the incomprehensible wisdom of God, unknown to any besides himself!-Yet man, sprung up only of a few days, wants to penetrate, and to set bounds to it. Who is it that hath known the mind of the LORD, or who hath been his counsellor? It is a wisdom only to be known through death to every thing, and through the entire loss of all self.

Mv brother now openly shewed his hatred for me. He married at *Orleans*, and my husband had the complaisance to go to his marriage, though he was in a poor state of health, the roads bad, and so covered with snow, that we had like to have been overset more than fifteen times: And pecially to the intendant, who was just then going to court, and was quite misinformed about the matter. God enabled me to manifest the truth in so clear a light, and gave such power to my words, that the intendant thanked me for. having so seasonably come to undeceive, and set him to rights in the affair. Had I not done this. he assured me the cause had been lost. And as they saw the falsehood of every article, they would have condemned the plaintiff to the costs. if it had not been so great a prince, who lent his name to the officers that deceived him. But to save the honour of the prince, they ordered us to pay him fifty crowns Hereby the two hundred thousand livres were reduced to only one hundred and fifty. My husband was exceedingly pleased at what I had done: But my brother appeared as outrageous against me, as if I had caused him some very great loss. moderately and at once ended an affair, which had at first appeared so very weighty and alarming.



CHAP. XXI.

A BOUT this time I fell into a state of total privation which continued near seven years. I seemed to myself cast down, as it were, from a throne of enjoyment, like Nebuchadnezzar, to live among beasts; a deplorable state, yet of the greatest advantage to me, by the use which

which divine wisdom made of it. This state of emptiness, darkness, and impotency, went far beyond any trials I had ever yet met with. have experienced since that, the prayer of the heart when it appears most dry and barren, nevertheless is not ineffectual nor offered in vain. For God gives what is best for us, though not what we most relish or wish for. Oh, were people but convinced of this truth; far from complaining all their life long, they would employ it only in making use, by a crucified faithfulness. and death, of the situation Gop brings them Hence, by causing us death they would procure us life; for it is a wonderful thing, as all our happiness, spiritual, temporal and eternal, consists in resigning ourselves to God, leaving it to him to do in us and with us as he pleases, and with so much the more submission, as things please us less; how, by this pure dependance on his Spirit, every thing is given us admirably: Our very weaknesses, in his hand, prove a source of humiliation. If the soul were faithful to leave itself in the hand of God, sustaining all his operations, whether gratifying or mortifying, suffering itself to be conducted, from moment to moment, by his hand, and annihilated by the strokes of his Providence, without complaining, or desiring any thing besides what it has; it would soon arrive at the experience of the eternal truth, though it might not know till late the ways and methods by which Gop conducted it thereto.

But the misfortune is, that people want to direct God, instead of resigning themselves to be directed by him. They want to shew him a way, instead of passively following that wherein he leads them. And from hence many souls, called

called to enjoy God himself, and not barely his gifts, spend all their lives in running after little consolations and feeding on them; resting there only, and making all their happiness to consist therein.

For you, my dear children, if my chains and my imprisonment any way afflict you, I pray that they may serve to engage you to seek nothing but God for himself alone, and never to desire to possess him but by the death of your whole selves, never to seek to be something in the ways of the Spirit, but choose ye to enter into the most profound nothingness.

I HAD an internal strife, which continually racked me;—two powers which appeared equally strong, seemed equally to struggle for the mastery within me.—On the one hand, a desire of pleasing thee, oh my God, a fear of offending, and a continual tendency of all my powers to thee;—and on the other side, the view of all my inward corruptions, the depravity of my heart, and the continual stirring and rising of self; promptitude of spirit, and a dragging outward toward the creatures.—Oh what torrents of tears, what desolations have these cost me?— Is it possible, I cried, that I have received so many graces and favours from Gop—only to lose them;—that I have loved him with so much ardour, but to be eternally deprived of Him-That his benefits have only produced my ingratitude,—his fidelity being paid by my infidelity; that my heart has been emptied of all creatures, and created objects, and filled with his presence and love,—in order now to be wholly void of divine power, and only filled with wanderings and created objects. I COULD

I could now no longer pray as formerly. Heaven seemed shut to me, and I thought justly too. I could get no consolation, nor make any complaint thereupon; nor had I any creature on earth to apply to, or to whom I might impart my condition. I found myself banished from all beings, without finding a support or refuge in any thing. I could; no more practise any virtue with facility; such as had formerly been familiar to me seemed now to have left me. "Alas! said I, is it possible that this heart, "formerly all on fire, should now become like "ice?"—I often thought all creatures combined against me. Loaden with a weight of past sins, and a multitude of new ones. I could not think God would ever pardon me, but looked on myself as a victim designed for hell. I would have been glad to do penances, to make use of prayers, pilgrimages, and vows. But still whatever I tried for a remedy, seemed only to increase the malady. I may say that tears were my drink. and sorrow my food. I felt in myself such a pain as I never could bring any to comprehend, but such as have experienced it. I had within myself an executioner who tortured me without respite. 'Even when I went to church, I was not easy there. To sermons I could give no attention; they were now of no service or refreshment to me. I scarce conceived or understood any thing at them, or about them. Heretofore I had endured pain with pleasure, and rejoiced at the sight of danger; but now a little of the former put me in a fret, and the shadow of the latter threw me into a fright.

CHAP. XXII.

AS my husband drew near his end, his distempers had no intermission. No sooner was he in appearance recovered from one but he fell into another. The gout, fever, gravel succeeded one another. He bore great pains with much patience, offering them to God, and making a good use of them: Yet his anger toward me increased, because reports and stories of me were multiplied to him, and those about him did nothing but vex him. He was the more susceptible of such impressions, as his pains gave him a stronger bent to vexation. At this time, the maid, who had used to torment me, sometimes took pity on me. She came to me as soon as I was gone into my closet, and said, "Come "to my master, that your mother-in-law may "not speak to him any more against you." I pretended to be ignorant of it all; but he could not conceal his displeasure, nor even suffer me My mother-in-law at the same time near him. kept no bounds. All that came to the house were witnesses of the continual scoldings, which I was forced to bear, and which I bore with much patience, notwithstanding my being in the condition I have mentioned.

My husband having, some time before his death, finished the building of the chapel in the country, where we spent a part of the summer, I had the conveniency of hearing prayers every day, and of the communion; but not daring to do it openly every day, the priest privately admitted me to the communion. They solemnized the dedication of this little chapel, and though I had already begun to enter into the condition

condition I have described, yet when they began to bless it, I felt myself all on a sudden inwardly seized, which continued more than five hours, all the time of the ceremony, when our Lord made a new consecration of me to himself. I then seemed to myself a temple consecrated to him, both for time and for eternity; and said within myself (speaking both of the one and the other) "May this temple never be profaned: May the praises of my God be "sung therein for ever!" It seemed to me at that time as if my prayer was granted. But soon all this was taken from me, and not so much as any remembrance thereof left to console me.

WHEN I was at this country house, which was only a little place of retreat before the chapel was built, I retired for prayer to woods and caverns. How many times, here, has Gop preserved me from dangerous and venomous beasts! Sometimes, at unawares, I kneeled upon serpents, which were there in great plenty; and they fled away without doing me any harm. Once I happened to be alone in a little wood wherein was a mad bull. I had an antipathy for these animals, and they for me, to such a degree as to single me out among several persons, and run after me. Every one cried out for fear: but, without offering me the least hurt, he betook himself to flight. If I could recount all the providences of God in my favour, it would appear wonderful: They were indeed so frequent and so continual, that I could not but be astonished at them. God everlastingly gives to such as have nothing wherewith to repay him. If there appears in the creature any fidelity or patience, it is he alone who gives it. If he

- -- : red : 🔭 zetire : :... in the . . Gop, · : shew · · · · · everyiic-con-Lake: And - renew it, the morning . . . Next esthe Lord ...:riage conof chastity, and, if M. BER-: me to do it. Leat interior joy, in to me, as for , plunged in the

deat.
coun
I had
day, a:
do it of
mitted
nized th
though I

Yi I

1.1.

 \mathbf{c}_{0}

Isband had just
Thou hast brocer thee a sacrimained in a deep or, quite dry and either weep nor very fine things, tor it by every vilence, which mation. A friar the fine acts hat as for me, at I must sacrimal not say one would.

ou; for though I caughter, yet I

attended and sat up with my husband four and twenty-nights before his death. I was more than a year after, in recovering the fatigue, joined to my sore weakness and pains both of body and of mind. The depression, or dryness and stupidity which I was in, was such that I could not say a word about GoD; it bore me down in such a manner, that I could hardly speak. However I entered for some moments into the admiration of thy goodness, oh my God, who had rendered me free, exactly on the day that I had taken thee for my spouse. I saw well that my crosses would not fail, since my mother-in-law had survived my husband. Also I was still tied, in having two children given me in so short a time before my husband's death; which has evidently appeared the effect of divine wisdom; for had I had only my eldest son left, I should have put him to the college; and then have gone into the convent of the Benedictines, and so stolen myself from the designs of God upon me.

I was willing to shew the esteem I had for my husband, in causing the most magnificent funeral to be made for him, at my own expence, that had ever been seen in that country. off the legacies he had left. My mother-in-law violently opposed every thing I could do for securing my own interests. I had nobody to apply to for advice or help; for my brother would not give me the least assistance. ignorant of affairs: But God, who, independent of my natural understanding, had always made me fit for every thing that pleased him, supplied me with such a perfect intelligence herein, that 1 succeeded. I omitted not the least punctilio, and was surprized that in these matters I should know without ever having learned. I digested all my papers, and regulated all my affairs, without the least assistance from any one. My husband had abundance of writings deposited in his hands. I took an exact inventory of them, and sent them severally to their owners, which, without divine assistance, would have been very difficult for me; because, my husband having been a long time sick, every thing was in the greatest confusion. This gained me the reputation of a skilful woman, as well as another affair which fell out thus.

A GREAT number of persons, who had been at law for several years, applied to my husband to settle their affairs. Though it was not properly the business of a gentleman, yet they applied to him, because he had both understanding and probity; and as he had a love for several of them he consented. There were twenty actions one upon another, and in all twenty-two persons concerned, who could not get any end put to their differences, by reason of new incidents continually falling out. My husband charged himself with getting lawyers to examine their papers, but died before he could make any procedure therein. After his death I sent for them to give them their papers: but they would not receive them, begging of me that I would accommodate them, and prevent their ruin. It appeared to me as ridiculous as impossible to undertake an affair of so great consequence, and which would require so long a discussion: Nevertheless relying on the strength and widom of God. I followed the movement he gave me to consent thereto. I shut myself up about thirty days in my closet, for all these affairs, without ever going out, but to mass and meals. The arbitration being at length prepared, they all signed it without seeing it. They were all so well satisfied therewith, that they could not forbear

publishing it every where. It was Gon alone who did those things; for when I had no more to do with those affairs, I knew nothing about them; and if I now hear any talk of such things, to me it sounds like Arabic.

My friends, and persons of the greatest distinction in the country, now came to advise me to remove from my mother-in-law: For though I never complained of her, every one knew her humour. I answered that I should account it my place and duty to stay with her, if she would permit me. The view that was given me was not to go from the cross. Wherefore I resolved neither to leave my mother-in-law, nor put away the girl I have spoken of.

I HOPE, sir, you will excuse me for writing in so little order. I cannot do otherwise, on account of so many different things I have to mention, which I can only recite as they present themselves.



CHAP. XXIII.

THIS chapter is only a detail of her interior hardships and sufferings during the time of total privation, as also great part of the 24, 25, 26, and 27th chapters, in which the like accounts often recur. The abridged account given in the 21st, may suffice on this head; yet all such particulars, as appear worthy of fresh notice in these chapters, shall be recited in their proper order. CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

REING now a widow, my crosses, which one would have thought should have abated, in-That turbulent domestic I have so often mentioned, instead of growing milder, now she depended on me, became more furious than. In our house she had amassed a good fortune, and I settled on her, besides, an annuity for the remainder of her life, for the She swelled services she had done my husband. with vanity and haughtiness. Having been used to sit up so much with an invalid, she had taken to drink wine, to keep up her spirits. had now passed into a habit. As she grew aged and weak, a small matter got into her head. tried to hide this fault; but it grew to that height that it could not be concealed. of it to her confessor, in order that he might try, softly and artfully, to reclaim her from it; but instead of profiting by her director's advice, she was outrageous against me. My motherin-law, who could hardly bear that fault, and had often spoken to me about it, now joined in reproaching me, and vindicating her. strange creature, when any company came, would cry out with all her might, "that I had "dishonoured her, thrown her into despair, and "would be the cause of her damnation, as I "was taking the ready course to my own:" Yet at this time God gave me an unbounded patience. I answered only with mildness and charity all her passionate invectives, giving her besides every possible mark of my affection. If any other maid came to wait on me, she would draw her back in a rage, crying out, that "I hated her on account of the affection with

which she had served my husband." When she had not a mind to come, I was obliged to serve myself; and when she did come, it was to chide and make a noise. When I was very unwell, as was often the case, this girl would appear to be in despair. From hence I thought it was from thee oh Lord, that all this came upon me; for without thy permission, she was scarce capable of such unaccountable conduct. She seemed not sensible of any faults, but always to think herself in the right. All those whom thou hast made use of to cause me to suffer, thought they were rendering service to thee in so doing.

I WENT to PARIS on purpose to see monsieur Bertot, who had been of very little service to me as a director. Not knowing my state, and I incapable of telling him it, he grew weary of the charge. At length he threw it up, and writ to me to take another director. I made no doubt but God had revealed to him my wicked state; and that desertion of me seemed a most certain mark of my reprobation. This was during the life of my husband. But now my renewed solicitations, and his sympathy with me on my husband's death, prevailed on him to resume my direction, which to me still proved of very little I went to Paris on purpose to see him. When there, I went twelve or fifteen times to him, without being able to tell him any thing of my condition: I told him indeed I wanted some ecclesiastic to educate my son, to rid him of his bad habits, and of the wrong impressions he had conceived against me. He found one for me of whom he had received very good recommendations.

I WENT

I WEST to make a retreat with M. BERTOT. and Mad. de C. He spoke to me all the time not a quarter of an hour at most. As he saw that I said nothing to him, for indeed I knew not what to say, as I had not spoke to him of the favours which the Lord had conferred on me: (not from a desire to conceal them, but because. the LORD did not permit me to do it, as he had over me only the designs of death) he therefore spoke to such as he looked upon to be more advanced in grace, and let me alone as one for whom there was nothing to be done. So well did God hide from him the situation of my soul, in order to make me suffer, that he wanted to refer me to certain considerations, thinking I had not the spirit of prayer, and that Mrs. GRAN-GER was mistaken in me when she told him I I did what I could to obey him, but to me it was entirely impossible. On this account Iwas displeased with myself, because I believed M. Bertor rather than my own experience. Through this whole retreat my inclination, which I discerned only by the resistance I made to it, was to rest in silence and nakedness of thought; but in the settling of my mind therein I feared I was disobeying the orders of my director: And this made me think that I was decayed and fallen off from grace. I kept myself in my state of nothingness, content with my poor low degree of prayer, without envying the higher one of others, which I judged myself unworthy of. I would have however desired much to do the will of God, and to advance more to please

^{*} Many of the pious Romanists retire a day, week, or a month on some fixed season—secluding themselves intirely from all worldly business and connections, in order to give up their whole time and heart to God in prayer, and this they call a retreat.

him, but despaired altogether of ever attaining that desirable end.

THERE was, in the place where I lived, one whose doctrine was suspected*; he possessed a dignity in the church, which obliged me to have a deference for him. As he presently understood how averse I was to all who were suspected of unsoundness in the faith, and supposed that I had some credit in that place, he used his utmost efforts to engage me in his sentiments. I answered him with so much clearness and energy, that he had not a word to reply. This increased his desire to win me over, and in order to it to contract a friendship with me. He continued to importune me two years and a half. As he was very polite, of an obliging temper, and had a good share of wit, I did not mistrust him, but even conceived a hope of his conversion, in which I found myself mistaken. I then ceased going near him. He came to enquire why he could see me no more. At that time he was so agreeable to my sick husband, in his assiduities about him, that I could not avoid his conversation; though I thought the shortest and best way for me would be to break off all acquaintance with him, which I did after the death of my husband, for M. BERTOT would not permit me to do it before: Therefore, when he now saw that he could not renew it, he raised up strong persecutions against me, and stirred up those of his party.

THESE gentlemen had at that time a method amongst them, by which they soon knew who were of their party, and who were opposite.

Most probably of Janseniem.

They sent to one another circular letters, by means of which, in a very little time, they cried me down on every side, after a very strange manner. Yet this gave me little trouble. I was glad of my new liberty, intending never again to enter into an intimacy with any one, which would give me so much difficulty to break off.

THE inability I was now in, of doing those exterior acts of charity I had done before, served this person with a pretext to publish that it was owing to him I had formerly done them; and that, having broke off from him, I now quitted Willing to ascribe to himself the merit of what God alone, by his grace, had made me do, he went so far as to preach of me publickly, as one who had been a bright pattern to the town, but was now become a scandal to it. Several times he preached very offensive things. And though I was present at those sermons, and they were enough to weigh me down with confusion, for they offended all that heard them; I could not be troubled at it, for I carried in myself my own condemnation beyond utterance. I thought I merited abundantly worse than all he could say of me, and that, if all men knew me, they would trample me under their feet. reputation then was blasted by the industry of this ecclesiastic: He caused all such as passed for persons of piety to declare against me. thought he and they were in the right, and therefore quietly bore it all. Confused like a criminal that dares not lift up his eyes, I looked upon the virtue of others with respect. I saw no fault in others, and no virtue in myself. any happened to praise me it was like a heavy blow struck at me, and I said in myself, "They " little know my miseries, and from what state "I have

"I have fallen." When any blamed me, I agreed to it, as right and just. Nature wanted sometimes to get out of such an abject condition, but could not find any way: And if I tried to make an outward appearance of righteousness, by the practice of some good thing, my heart in secret rebuked me as guilty of hypocrisy, in wanting to appear what I was not; and God did not permit that to succeed. Oh, how excellent are the crosses of Providence! All other crosses are of no value.

I was often very ill, and in danger of death, and knew not what to do to prepare myself for it. Several persons of piety, who had been acquainted with me, writ to me about those things which the gentleman (above hinted at) spread about me, and I did not offer to justify myself, though I knew myself innocent of the things whereof they accused me. One day being in the greatest desolation and distress, I opened the New Testament, and chanced to meet with these words, "My grace is sufficient for thee, "for my strength is made perfect in weakness:" Which for a little time gave me some relief.

THE LIFE OF

CHAP. XXV.

from me all the sensibility for the creatures, or things an instant, as one takes off a sort that after that time I had none which I can never be sufficiently which I can never be sufficiently it. My God seemed to be displeased with me, that there had but the grief of having lost through my fault. The loss was every day increasing, (by means party whom I have menually p

which always more impotent for every - Nime works, as I could not go to see ... way at church, nor practise prayer, water colder towards God, in proporwww.ucus acusible of my wrong steps, surered me the more both in my own in which of others. There were in the and war very considerable gentlemen in the me, and even such hank of me. They presented ,, usuge the very depth of my outmand desolation. At first it ap-.... that it seemed to me then, and mind, The me, it was a limself to me, I should

should have refused him with pleasure, to shew thee, oh my Gop, that with all my miseries I was resolved to be thine alone; and that if thou wouldst not accept of me. I should at least have the consolation of having been faithful to thee, to the utmost of my power. For as to my inward state I never mentioned it to any body: I never spoke thereof, nor of the suitors, though my mother-in-law would say, "If I did not "marry, it was because none would have me." It was sufficient for me that thou, oh my God, knewest that I sacrificed them to thee, (without saying a word to any body) especially one whose high birth and amiable exterior qualities might have tempted both my vanity and inclination. Oh could I but have hoped, through those sacrifices and heavy afflictions to become agreeable to thee, such a hope would have been like a change from hell to heaven. But so far was I from presuming to hope for it, that I feared this sea of affliction might also be followed by everlasting misery, in the loss of thee. I durst not desire to enjoy thee, I only desired not to offend thee.

I was for five or six weeks at the last extremity. I could not take any nourishment. A spoonful of broth made me faint. My voice was gone that when they put their ears close to my mouth, they could scarcely distinguish my words. I threw up to the very chyle of my stomach. I could see no hopes of salvation, yet could not be unwilling to die, as I bore a strong impression that the longer I should live the more I should sin. Of the two I thought I rather chose hell than sin. All the good, which God made me do, now seemed to me evil, or full of faults. All my prayers, penances, alms and charities,

charities, seemed to rise up against me, and heighten my condemnation. I thought there appeared on the side of God, on my own, and from all creatures, one general condemnation, my conscience was a witness against me, which I could not appease; yet what may appear strange, the sins of my youth did not then give me any They did not rise up in judgment pain at all. against me, but there appeared one universal testimony against all the good I had done, and all the sentiments of evil I had entertained. I went to confessors, I could tell them nothing of my condition; and if I could have told them. they could not have understood it. They would have regarded as eminent virtues, what, oh my God, thy eyes all pure and chaste rejected as infidelity. It was then that I felt the truth of what thou hast said, that thou judgest our righteousness. Oh how pure art thou! Who can comprehend it? It was then that I turned my eyes on every side, to see what way succour might come to me; but my succour could come no way but from him who made heaven and earth. As I saw there was no safety for me, or spiritual health in myself, I entered into a secret complacency in seeing no good in myself whereon to rest, or presume for salvation. The nearer my destruction appeared, the more I found in God himself, wherewith to augment my trust and confidence, notwithstanding he seemed so justly irritated against me. It seemed to me that I had in JESUS CHRIST all that was wanting in myself. Holy Jesus! I was that lost sheep of the House of Israel, whom thou wast come to save: Thou wast come to save her who could find no salvation out of thee. Oh we stout and righteous men! Observe as much as ye please of excellence in what ye have done to the glory of God. As for me, I only I only glory in my infirmities, since they have merited for me such a SAVIOUR!

ALL my troubles, joined to the loss of my reputation, which yet was not so great as I apprehended, (it being only amongst a party) rendered me so unable to eat, that it seemed wonderful how I lived. In four days I did not eat as much as would make one very moderate repast. I was obliged to keep my bed through mere weakness, my body being no longer able to support the burden laid upon it. If I had thought, known, or heard tell, that there had ever been such a state as mine, it would have exceedingly relieved me : But my very pain appeared to me to be sin. Spiritual books, when I tried to read them, all contributed only to augment it; for I saw in myself none of those degrees which they set down. I did not so much as comprehend them. And when they treated of the pains of certain states, I was very far from attributing any of them to myself. said to myself, "These persons feel the pains "of divine operations; but as to me, I sin, and "feet nothing but my own wicked state." I could have wished to separate the sin from the confusion of sin, and provided I had not offended God, all would have been easy to me.

SEE here a slight sketch of my last miseries, which I am glad to let you know, because in their beginning I omitted many infidelities, having had too much of an earnest attachment, vain complaisance, unprofitable and tedious conversations, though self-love and nature made a sort of necessity for them; but toward the latter part I could not have borne a speech too human, nor the least thing of the kind. God by

or answers we invited me from the real evil.

There well sing with the church,

there are which has obtained such a Re
series in the

CHAP. XXVI.

WLE first religious person that Gon made use of to draw me to himself, to whom (accordwe to his desire) I writ from time to time, wrote wine in the depth of my distress, desiring me to write to him no more, signifying his disapprobation of what came from me, and that I displeased God greatly. A father, a Jesuit, who had cateened me much, wrote to me in like manner. No doubt, it was by thy permission, they thus contributed to compleat my desolation I thanked them for their charity, and commended myself to their prayers. then so indifferent to me to be decried of every buly, even of the greatest saints, that it added but little to my pain. The pain of displeasing GOL and the strong propensity I felt in myself wall sorts of faults, caused still my most lively and scuable pain.

thad been accustomed from the beginning to divues and to privation*. I even preferred it to

[•] ten those unacquainted with the lives and writings of each deeply interior persons as Lady Guion, it may be particularly

to the state of abounding, because I knew that I must seek God above all. I had even, at the first beginnings, an instinct of the innermost of

my

ticularly necessary, to throw in a few observations on this passage. She here treats of that severe purification, which precedes the total renewal of the soul in Gon,-its restoration to all it had lost in Adam; a state which the old Puritans called transformation, which the Mystics commonly call the unitive etate, which some at present, term the state of sanctification, and which, in the Scriptures is also explained by different appellations, and strongly expressed by St. PAUL-The fullness of the stature of the new man in Christ Jesus. The whole spiritual process, including this state of purification, is comprehended in the following extract from a late celebrated writer. "At first," says he, "divine grace acts upon us "differently, by motives of self-interest, and attracts by celes-** tial delectation, or inward remorses. It discovers to us by "turns, the beauty of virtue, or the deformity of vice, the " punishments that attend crimes, and the pure delights that "are to be enjoyed in a future immortality. Fear and hope "act in us alternately. Sometimes the soul is filled with a " sacred horror for its present state, a bitter anguish for its in-"fidelities, and a true desire of satisfying divine justice. At "other times, truth shows itself to the mind with all its "charms, draws it with soft smiles and endearing caresses, "enchants us with noble ideas, and celestial sensations. Then "we attach ourselves to the love of virtue, by the sweetness " that accompanies it, from a view of the recompence that at-"tends it; and by the natural invincible love of happiness. "Grace makes use of our natural dispositions and faculties, "to convert the soul to its supernatural object as beautifying. "It is thus that we renounce all the delusions of sense. "gather in our scattered powers that were dispersed upon "things without us, and retire into our spiritual natures, there "to study our own hearts, and be acquainted with ourselves. "This is true conversion, and the beginning of wisdom.

"This is true conversion, and the beginning of wisdom.

"After this, grace proceeds to another operation, less di"lectable, but more purifying. It is then we discover by de"grees, all the labyrinths and windings of the heart, all the
"refined passions of self-love, its usurpations upon the rights
"of the Deity, its idolatrous complacency in its own virtues,
"and the secret pride by which it referred them all to itself.
"To humble and cure it of this spiritual self-attribution, by
"which the devils fell, crosses from within and from with-

nanner of thing

178 to run after

17 spirit and senses

were

aus noiest it; the imagise, which it thought exper violence than ever; so not are dried up. It can east noble sentiments, and even in the fire, the central cove, throw up from the mark all its natural impurity, out tes seem darkened and dre is natural impotence, imguess, and the horrible soliin ne presence, that can neicourse, nor in itself.

contact authful in a total abnegation contact of all spiritual and terminated and selfish delectation, securated of self, elevated above secures truly regenerated, and contact in God, who invests is lite, light and love. It is to so the Holles, that it becomes ligh, partakes of the royal could holocaust of praise, love, securally all the virtues and the security of these three operations spects: the second disengages and transforms us into the di-

where arise from our mistaking which alas too of of man deceitful above all shadow for its own vindication itself, on every return of the course, that such a state is simple to the course in this chapter. But the course in this chapter. But the course in this chapter. But the course in this chapter is a course vice, one darling secret vice, one darling secret vice, passion or temper; if the priches, or seekest after the course in the left, trampled upon, wholly a-stretch

were in such a manner struck, by thy permission. oh my God, who wast pleased to destroy me without mercy, that the farther I went, the more every thing appeared to me a sin: even crosses appeared to me no more crosses but real faults. I thought I drew them all on myself by my imprudent words and actions. was like those, who, looking through a coloured glass, behold every thing with the same dye with which it is stained. Had I been able to do any exterior actions as formerly, or penances for my evil, it would have relieved me; but, I was forbidden to do the latter, beside, I grew so timorous, and felt in myself such a weakness, as made it appear impossible for me to do them: I looked on them with horror, I found myself now so weak and incapable of any thing of the kind.

METHINKS I omit many things, both of providences of God in my favour, and of rugged paths through which I was obliged to pass: But as I have only one general view, I leave them in the knowledge of God oly. Afterwards, being forsaken of my director, the coldness towards me which I remarked in the persons conducted by him, gave me no more trouble, nor

a-stretch for the kingdom and glory of God, until a living and intimate sense of his divine presence abide in thee. I say, if thou hast not experienced all this, and yet find thy heart in a cold lifeless state of dry sterility, attempt not to compare it, nor flatter thyself that it is at all similar to that state of radical purification, which our author describes in this chapter.

With regard to those drynesses and distractions, to which the generality of christians are subject, and which arise from infidelity, unwatchfulness and sin, the reader is referred to the author's treatise on prayer, which is subjoined to this

work.

indeed

indeed the estrangement of all the creatures, on account of my inward humiliation. My brother also joined with those who exclaimed against me, even tho' he had never seen them before. I believe it was God who conducted things this way, for my brother has worth, and undoubtedly thought he did well in acting thus.

I was obliged to go about some business to a town where some near relations of my motherin-law lived. How did I find things changed here! When I was there before, they entertained me in a most elegant and obliging manner, regaling me from house to house with emulation: But now they treated me with the utmost contempt, saying, they did it to revenge what. I made their relation suffer. As I saw the thing went so far, and that not with standing all my care and endeavours to please her, I had not been able to succeed. I resolved to come to an explanation with her. I told her, "that there " was a current report that I treated her ill, tho' "I made it my study to give her every mark of "my esteem. If the report were true, I desired " her to allow me to remove from her; for that "I would not choose to stay to give her pain, "but only with a quite contrary view." She answered very coldly, "I might do what I "would; for she had not spoken about it, but "was resolved to live apart from me." This was fairly giving me my discharge, and I thought of taking my measures privately to retire. As I had not, since my widowhood, made any visits but such as were of pure necessity, or charity, there were found too many discontented spirits, who made a party with her against me; while God required of me an inviotable secrecy of all my pains, both exterior and interior.

interior. There is nothing which makes nature die so much, as to find neither support nor consolation. In short I saw myself obliged to go out, in the middle of winter, with my children and my daughter's nurse. At that time there was no house empty in the town. The Benedictines offered me an apartment in theirs.

I was now in a great straight; on one side fearing least I was shunning the cross, on the other side thinking it unreasonable to impose my stay on one to whom it was only painful, Besides what I have related of her carriage, which still continued, when I went into the country to take a little repose, she complained that I left her alone. If I desired her to come thither she would not. If I said, "I durst not "ask her to come, for fear of incommoding her, "by changing her bed," she replied, "It was "only an excuse, because I would not have her "go; and that I only went to be away from "her." When I heard that she was displeased at my being in the country, I returned to the town. Then she could not bear to speak to me, or to see me. I accosted her without making as if I saw how she carried it; but instead of making me any answer, she turned her head another way. I often sent her my coach, desiring her to come and spend a day in the country. She sent it back empty, without any answer. If I passed some days there without sending it, she complained aloud. In short, all I did to please her soured her, Gop so permitting it; for she had in the main a good heart, but was troubled with an uneasy temper: And I do not fail to think myself under much obligation to her.

BEING

.. "uss day I said to ly mother, on this ... born, to bring it in his name. I sastic, whom I had . strengthening and ang but weaken and .. i ought not to suffer . credit enough to diswaver defective or cul-.. them were warned to e.u. and all her friends as ready to go off, one ands, a man of worth, seem for me, without be heard it, was much ... the town; for the rerought, would be a loss served to speak to my cest manner he could, ... he had spoken to her, ce put me away, but if I or hinder me." After a order to content her. willing to make a hunor know about what: about every thing, But that was not now ... no complaint of her, oper for me to continue that it was but just to her ease." However .. Ar room. Then I told pardon, if ever I had it; that I desired her, " before

before this gentleman, who was her friend, to "tell me wherein I had given her any offence." Here Gop permitted, that she made a declaration of the truth in his presence: She said, "She was not a person to suffer herself to be "offended; that she had no other complaint "against me but that I did not love her, and "that I wished her dead." I answered her. "That these thoughts were far from my heart. "so far from it, that I should be glad, by my "best care and attendance on her, to prolong "her days: that my affection was real, but that "she never would be persuaded to believe it, "whatever testimonies I could give, so long as "she hearkened to people who spoke to her "against me; that she had with her a maid, "who, far from shewing me any respect, treated "me ill, so far as to push me when she wanted "to pass by: She had done it at church; "making me give way to her with as much vio-"lence as contempt, several times also in my "chamber grating me with her words; that I "had never complained of it; because such a "temper might one day give her trouble." She took the girl's part : Nevertheless we embraced one another, and it was left so. Soon after, when I was in the country, this maid, having me no more to vent her chagrins on, behaved in such a manner to my mother-in-law as she could not bear. She immediately upon it, put her out of doors. I must say here on my mother-inlaw's behalf, that she had both sense and virtue. and except certain faults, which persons who do not practise prayer are liable to, she had good qualities. Perhaps I caused crosses to her without intending it, and she to me without knowing it. I hope what I write will not be seen by any who may be offended with it, or who may not not be in a condition of seeing these matters in Gop.

That gentleman who had used me so ill, for breaking off my acquaintance with him, among his penitents had one who, for affairs which befel her husband, was obliged to quit the country. He himself was accused of the same things of which he had so liberally and unjustly accused me, and even of things much worse. and with more noise and outcry. Though I well knew all this, God granted me the favour never to make his downfal the subject of my discourse; never to open my lips about it. the contrary, when any spoke to me of it, I pitied him, and said what I could in mitigation of his case. And God governed my heart so well, that it never offered to go into any vain joy at seeing him overtaken, and opprest, with those kind of evils which he had been so assiduous in endeavouring to bring upon me. And though I knew that my mother-in-law was informed of it all, I never spoke to her about it, or about the sad confusions he had caused in a certain family. I did not lay hold on the opportunity to mention any thing of the wrong he had done I only answered her in a few words without blaming him; as God required of me such a silence about my crosses, for more than sixteen years, that my lips seemed sealed in every thing that regarded them.

CHAP. XXVII.

ONE day during my husband's life time. loaden with sorrow, and not knowing what to do, I wished to speak to a person of distinction and merit, who came often into the country, and passed for one deeply interior. I wrote to request an opportunity with him, for that I wanted his instruction and advice. But soon after I felt remorse for it: And this voice sprung in my heart, "What, -dost thou seek for ease, "and to shake off my yoke?" Hereupon I instantly sent a note again to desire him to excuse me, adding, "That what I had wrote was only "from self-love; and not necessity; that as he "knew what it was to be faithful to God, I " hoped he would not disapprove my acting with "this christian simplicity." Yet he resented it, which surprized me much, as I had conceived a high idea of his virtue. Virtues he has, but such as are full of the life and activities of nature. and unacquainted with the paths of mortification and death. Thou, oh my God, hast been my conductor even in these paths, as with admiration I have discovered since they are past. Blessed be thy Name for ever. I am obliged to bear this testimony to thy goodness.

Before I continue my narration, I must add one remark, which the Lord gave me to make upon the way by which he, in his goodness, was pleased to conduct me; which is, that this obscure path is the surest to mortify the soul, as it leaves it not any prop to lean upon for support. Though it has no application to any particular state of Jesus Christ; yet, at its coming out,

it finds itself clothed with all his dispositions and divine states, having truly put on CHRIST. The impure and selfish soul, is hereby purified. as gold in the furnace. Full of its own judgment, and its own will before, but now obeys like a child, and finds no other will in itself. Before, it would have contested for a trifle: Now it vields at first, not with reluctance and pain, by way of practising virtue, but as it were naturally. Its own vices are vanished. creature so vain before now loves nothing but poverty, littleness and humiliation. It preferred itself above every body, now every body above itself, having a boundless charity for its neighbour, to bear with his faults and weaknesses, in order to win him by love, which before it could not do but with very great constraint. The rage of the wolf is changed to the meekness of the lamb.

During all the time of my experiencing my miseries and my deep trials, I went after no fine sights or recreations. When others went, I stayed at home. I wanted to see and know nothing but JESUS CHRIST. My closet was my only diversion. Even when the queen was near me, whom I had never seen, and whom I had desire enough to see; I had only to open my eyes, and look out to see her; yet did not do it. I had been fond of hearing others sing: And yet I was once four days with one who passed for the finest voice in the world, without ever desiring her to sing; which surprized her, because she was not ignorant that, knowing her name, I must know the charming excellence of her voice. However, I committed some infidelities, in enquiring what others said of me by way of blame. I met with one who told me every thing. And though I shewed shewed nothing of it, it served only to mortify me, as I saw I was yet too much alive to self, and that self-love and nature had put me upon this enquiry.

I SHOULD never be able to express the number of my miseries; but they are so vastly surmounted by the favours of God, and so swallowed up in these that I can see them no more. One of the things which gave me most pain in the seven years I have spoken of, especially the five last, was so strange a folly of my imagination that it gave me no rest. My senses bore it company in such sort that I could no more shut my eyes at church: And thus having all the gates and avenues open, I was like a vineyard exposed, because the hedges which the father of the family had planted were torn away. I saw then every one that came and went, and every thing that passed in the church. For the same force, which had drawn me inward to recollection, seemed to push me outward to dissipation.

LOADEN with miseries of all sorts, weighed down with oppressions, and crushed under continual crosses, I thought of nothing else but ending my days thus. There remained in me not the least hope of ever emerging out of so distressing a state: But notwithstanding I thought I had lost grace for ever, and the salvation which it merits for us, I longed at least to do what I could for God, though I feared I should never love him; and seeing the happy state from whence I had fallen, I wished in gratitude to serve him, though I looked on myself as a victim doomed to destruction. Sometimes the view of that happy period caused secret desires to spring up in my heart, of recovering it again;

rue I was instantly rejected and thrown back meetic leptil of the abyss, from whence I could searce watter a sigh; I judged myself to be in a searce which was due to unfaithful souls. I seemal, the my God, as if I was for ever cast off from the regard, and from that of all creatures. By degrees my state ceased to be painful. I became even insensible to it, and my insensibility seemed like the final hardening of my reprobation. My coldness appeared to me a mortal coldness. And it was truly so, oh my God, since I thus died to self, in order to live wholly in thee, and in thy precious love, as I am going to relate.

To resume then my history, a servant of mine wanted to become a BARNABITE. I wrote about it to Father DE LA MOTHE; he answered me, that I must address Father LA COMBE, who was then the superior of the BARNABITES of To-That obliged me to write to him. always preserved secret respect and esteem for him, as one under grace. I was glad of this opportunity of recommending myself to his prayers. I wrote to him about my fall from the grace of God, and that I had requited his fayours with the blackest ingratitude; that I was miserable, and a subject worthy of compassion; and that, far from having advanced towards (long I was become entirely alienated from him. the answered me in such a manner, as if he had known, by a supernatural light, notwithstanding the trightful description I had given of myself, that my condition was of grace. But I could uot then believe it.

In the midst of my miseries *Geneva came into

* (in the territory of the territory of

into my mind, in a singular manner, which "What, said I, to comcaused me many fears. "plete my reprobation, shall I go to such an ex-"cess of impiety, as to quit the faith through "apostacy? (The inhabitants of GENEVA being generally Protestants or Calvinists.) "Am I "then about quitting that church, for which I "would give a thousand lives? Or, shall I ever "depart from that faith which I would even "wish to seal with my blood?" I had such a distrust of myself, that I durst hope for nothing, but had a thousand reasons for fear, after the experience I had of my weakness. Nevertheless the letter, which I had received from Father LA COMBE, in which he wrote me an account of his present disposition, somewhat similar to mine, had such an effect, as to restore peace and calmness to my mind. I felt myself inwardly united to him, as to a person of great fidelity to the grace of God. Afterwards a woman appeared to me in a dream to be come down from Heaven, to tell me that God demanded me at GENEVA.

ABOUT eight or ten days before MAGDALEN'S day, 1680, it came into my mind to write to father LA COMBE, and to request him, if he received my letter before that day, to pray particularly for me. And it was so ordered, contrary even to my expectations, that he received my letter on St. MAGDALEN'S eve, and when praying for me the next day, it was said to him, thrice over, with much power, "Ye

zerland on the river Rhone, at the west end of the famous lake of Geneva, and is the great resort of the Calvinists from France, and other nations for education, it having been the place of Calvin's residence, and his disciples having had the dominion of that city ever since.

"shall both dwell in one and the same place," he was very much surprized, as he never had received interior words before. I believe, oh my Gov, that that has been much more verified, both in our inward sense and experience, and in the same crucitying adventures which have betallen us, pretty much alike; and in thyself, who art our dwelling, than in any temporal abode: For, though I have been for some time in the same country with him, and thy Providence has furnished us with some opportunities of being together, yet it appears to me, that it is much more verified in the former, as we both have had the like experience of Jesus Christ crucified.

CHAP. XXVIII.

ON that happy Magdalene's day, my soul was perfectly delivered from all its pains. It had already begun since the receipt of the first letter from Father LA COMBE, to recover a new life: It was then indeed only like that of a dead person raised, though not yet unbound from his grave-clothes: But on this day I was, as it were, in perfect life, and set wholly at liberty. I then found myself as much raised above nature, as before I had been depressed under its burden. I was inexpressibly overjoyed to find him, whom I thought I had lost for ever, returned to me again

again with unspeakable magnificence and purity. It was then, oh my God, that I found again in thee with new advantages, in an ineffable manner, all I had been deprived of: And the peace I now possessed was all holy, heavenly and inexpressible; all I had enjoyed before was only a peace, the gift of God, but now I received and possessed the God of Peace; yet the remembrance of my past misery, still brought a fear upon me, lest nature should find means to take to itself any part therein. As soon as it wanted to see or taste any thing, the spirit ever watchful crossed and repelled it. I was far from elevating myself then, or attributing to myself any thing of this new state: For my experience made me sensible what I was.

I HOPED I should enjoy this happy state for some time, but little did I think my happiness so great and immutable as it was. If one may judge of a good by the trouble which precedes it, I leave mine to be judged of, by the sorrows I had undergone before my attaining to it. The Apostle PAUL tells us, that "the sufferings of "this life are not to be compared with the glory "that is prepared for us." How true is that even of this life? One day of this happiness was worth more than years of suffering. It was indeed at that time well worth all I had undergone, though it was then only dawning. alacrity for doing good was restored to me, greater than ever. It seemed to be all quiet, free and natural to me. At the beginning this liberty was less extensive; but as I advanced it grew still greater. I had occasion to see Mon. BERTOT for a few moments, and just told him, I thought my state much changed, having scarce time to tell him any more. He seeming attentive

saerei. "No." I == = prefer the : : clieve them - -- nce. This did for every state encicude, every day Livets of good, with-Whenever a arion. as presented to my and as it were a core it. My imagiat I had now very ... I wondered at the a curity of my whole

" Father LA COMBE, . . had discovered to sin regard to me, myself, either of it is myself, either of but said nothing cor God to make ... will, and fearing should be con-...d to draw me out e out of my conown misery, inca-. Mainer it appeared or the designs of "Oh my Lord," ... e wretched to do have all the glory . . attribute nothing 🚉 a shouldest take a .. great talents, one something thereof: " But

"But if thou takest me, it will be manifest that "thou alone art the author of whatever good "shall be done." I continued quiet in my spirit, leaving the whole affair to God, being satisfied, if he should require any thing of me, that he would furnish me with the means of performing it. I heldmyself in readiness with a full resolution to execute his orders, whenever he should make them known, though it were to the laying down of my life. I was released from all crosses, I resuned my care of the sick, and dressing of wound, and God gave me to cure the most desperate. When surgeons could do no more, or were soing to cut off limbs, it was then that God male me cure them.

On the joy that accompanied me every where, finding still him who had united me to himself, in his own immensity and boundless vastitude! Oh how truly did I experience what he said in the Gospel, by the four Evangelists, and by one of them twice over, "Whosoever will lose his "life for my sake shall find it; and whosoever "will save his life shall lose it."

WHEN I had lost all created supports, and even divine ones, I then found myself happily compelled to fall into the pure divine, and to fall into it, through all those very things which seemed to remove me further from it. In losing all the gifts, with all their supports, I found the GIVER. In losing the sense and perception of thee in myself—I found thee, oh my God, to lose thee no more in thyself, in thy own immutability. Oh poor creatures, who pass along all your time in feeding on the gifts of God, and think therein to be the most favoured and happy, how I pity you if you stop here, short of the

THE LIFE OF

remain of these very gifts retin—How many pass all remains highly of them-reothers who being call-remains, yet pass all their in in inward agonies, God, through death remains they are always required by the whole where they is fulness; which is a received known till another

rappiness did I not largely : ith my little family. we my tranquillity! As in the slender age of my a pplication too much. : ... ! retired a great part vicre I passed as many me had months of sor-, dealt by me as by thy es double for all thou and delivering me from gavest me a marvellous me. What was sur-... mother-in-law, who is of me, without my say asual to please her, w better satisfied with Sectore had cried me . ed their sorrow for it. ses. My reputation · more advintage, in d to be lost. I remained

mained in an entire peace, as well without as within. It seemed to me that my soul was become like that new Jerusalem, spoken of in the Apocalypse, prepared as a bride for her husband, and where there is no more sorrow, or sighing. I had a perfect indifference to every thing that is here, and an union so great with the good will of Gop, that my own will seemed to be entirely lost. My soul could not incline itself on one side or other, since that another will had taken place of its own, but only nourished itself with the daily providences of Gop. It now found a will all divine, which yet was so natural and easy to it, that it found itself infinitely more free in this than ever it had been in its own.

THESE dispositions have still subsisted, and still grown stronger, and more perfect even to this hour. I could neither desire one thing nor another, but was content with whatever fell out, without making any reflection thereupon, or giving any attention thereto, except when any in the house asked me, "Will you have this, or "that?" And then I was surprized to find that there was nothing left in me which could desire or choose. I was as if every thing, of smaller matters, quite disappeared, a higher power having taken up and filled all their room. I even perceived no more that soul which he had formerly conducted by his crook and his staff, because now he alone appeared to me, my soul having given up its place to him. It seemed to me, as if it was wholly and altogether passed into its Gop, to make but one and the same thing with him; even as a little drop of water cast into the sea, receives the qualities of the sea. Oh union of unity, demanded of God by

Jaces Christ for men, and merited by him. How strong is this in a soul that is become lost in its God! After the consummation of this divine unity, the soul remains hid with Christ in God. This happy loss is not like those transient ones, which extasy operates, which are rather an absorbment than union, for the soul afterwards finds itself again with all its own dispositions. But here she feels that prayer fulfilled—John xvii. 21. That they all may be one as thou Father art in me, and I in thee; that they also may be one in us.

CHAP. XXIX.

T WAS obliged to go to PARIS about some business. Having entered into a church that was very dark, I went up to the first contessor I found, whom I did not know, nor have ever seen since. I made a simple and short confession: but to the confessor himself I said not a word. He surprized me much in saying, "I "know not who you are, whether maid, wife or "widow; but I feel a strong inward motion to "exhort you to do what the Lord has made "known to you that he requires of you. "have nothing else to say." I answered him, " Father, I am a widow who have little children. "What else could God require of me, but to "take due care of them in their education?" He replied, "I know nothing about this. "know "know if God manifests to you that he requires "something of you; there is nothing in the "world which ought to hinder you from doing "his will. One must leave one's children to do "that." This surprized me much. However, I told him nothing of what I felt for Geneva. I disposed myself submissively to quit every thing, if God required it of me. I did not look upon it a good I aspired to, or a virtue I hoped to acquire, or as any thing extraordinary, or as an act that would merit some return on God's part; but only gave myself up to be led in the way of my duty, whatever it might be, feeling no distinction between my own will and the will of God in me.

In this disposition, I lived with my family in the greatest tranquillity until one of my friends had a great desire to go on a mission to Siam. He lived twenty leagues from my house. As he was ready to make a vow to this purpose, he found himself stopped, and an impulse to come to speak to me. He came immediately, and as he had some reluctance to declare his mind to me, he went to read prayers in my chapel, hoping God would be satisfied with his making the vow, but as he was performing divine service in my hearing, he was stopped again. Whereupon he left the chapel to come to speak to me. He then told me his intention.

Though I had no thought of saying any thing positive to him on that head, I felt an impression in my soul to relate to him my case, and the idea I had had of a long time past for Geneva. I told him a dream I had had, which appeared to me supernatural, and had reference hereto: And when I had done, I felt a strong impulse to say

"and that it was a providential thing." I answered him, "that I had no vocation for Gex, but for Geneva." He said, "I might go "from hence to that city."

I THOUGHT this was a way which divine Providence had opened, for my taking this journey with the less difficulty. And as I yet knew nothing positive of what God would require at my hand, I was not willing to oppose any thing. "Who knows, said I, but the will of God is "only that I should contribute to this establish-"ment?"

I WENT to see the prioress of the new catholics at Paris. She seemed much rejoiced, and assured me she would gladly join me. As she was a great servant of God, this confirmed me: For when I could reflect a little, which was but seldom, I thought God would make choice of her for her virtue, and me for my worldly substance; for when I inadvertantly looked at myself, I could not think Gop would make use of me: But when I saw the things in God, then I perceived the more I was nothing, the fitter I was for his designs. As I saw nothing in myself extraordinary, as I looked on myself in the lowest stage of perfection, and imagined that an extraordinary degree of inspiration was necessary for extraordinary designs, this made me hesitate, and fear deception. I did not yet sufficiently comprehend, that to follow, step by step, the guidance of divine Providence was the greatest and purest light. It was not that I was in fear of any thing, as to my perfection and salvation which I had referred to GoD; but I was afraid of not doing his will by being too ardent and hasty in doing it. I went to consult Father CLAUDE

to him, "You must go to SIAM. "serve me in this affair. It is for "Gop has sent you hither; I desire "me your advice." After three c considered the matter, and consult he told me that he believed I was t but to be the better assured of it. needful to see the Bishop of GENEV approved of my design, it would be it was from GoD; if not, I must d in with his sentiment. He then o Annecy*, to speak to the Bishor me a faithful account of what the on together. As he was advanc were deliberating what way he co a journey, when there came two told us the Bishop was at Paris. on as an extraordinary provide: me to write to Father La Combe, the affair to his prayers, as he v . . try. He then spoke to the Bish ... I, having occasion to go thithe in: also.

I told him, "that my desig er.
"the country, to employ the serve to erect an establishment for a be willing truly to serve to "themselves unto him with "that many of the servant establish the couraged me thereto." The confort the design. He said, " an "tholics going to establish the explanation."

† GEX, 2 town of FRANCE, 7 maggiced of

^{*} Annecy, a city situate on a 20 miles south of Geneva. In this to ta

communicate himself to faithful souls, to give them foretokens of things to come, which concern them. Thus mysterious dreams are found a many places of the holy scriptures. They have singular properties, as

- 1st. To leave a certainty that they are mysterious, and will have their effect in their season;
- 2d. To be hardly ever effaced out of the memory, though one forgets all others;
- 3d. To redouble the certainty of their truth every time one thinks of them; and

4th. They generally leave a certain unction, a divine sense or savour at one's waking. I received letters from sundry religious persons, some of whom lived far from me, and from one another, relating to my going forth in the service of (iop, and some of them to Geneva in particular, in such a manner as surprized me. One of them intimated that I must there bear the cross and be persecuted; and another of them that I should be eyes to the blind, feet to the lame, and arms to the maimed.

The ecclesiastic, or chaplain, of our house was much afraid lest I was under a delusion: But what at that time greatly confirmed me, was that Father Claude Martin, whom I mentioned above, writ to me that, after many prayers, God had given him to know that he required me at Canada, and to make a free sacrifice of every thing to him. I answered him, "that perhaps Cod required of me nothing more than a sum to among to assist in a foundation which was going to be established there." He replied, that

that God had made him know that he wanted not my worldly substance but myself. At the very same time with this letter I received one from Father LA COMBE, who writ to me that God had given him a certainty, as he had done to several of his good and faithful servants and hand-maids, that he wanted me at Geneva. The writers of these two letters lived above a hundred and fifty leagues from each other; and yet both writ the same thing. I could not but be somewhat surprized to receive at the same time two letters so exactly alike, from two persons living so far distant from each other.

As soon as I became fully convinced of its being the will of Gop, and saw nothing on earth capable of detaining me, my senses had some pain about leaving my children. upon reflecting thereon a doubt seized my mind. Oh my Gop! Had I rested on myself, or on the creatures, I should have revolted; and, as we read in the scriptures, leaned on a broken reed, which would have pierced my hand. But relying on thee alone, what needed I to fear? I resolved then to go as a fool, regardless of the censures of such as understand not what it is to be a servant of God, and to receive and obey his orders, I firmly believed that he, by his Providence, would furnish the means necessary for the education of my children, and that in pure faith. I put every thing by degrees in order, God alone being my guide.

.1.1.

ince in the one hand, apwas ig all things, it seemed and the stronger, narks of affection from and lose which I received ater-in-law; even the least . .: he made her very uneasy: ... encration for my virtue." merioured not a little to this as we had heard from one or ... seems had offered suit to me. though their fortune . So had upbraided me on this socied her not a word, whereby .. same that it depended only on to advantage. She began to gorous treatment, as hers had .. agat excite me to deliver mywith honour from her tyso scusible what damage that So she was now very ... very occasion.

inguess to sacrifice all to him, as my life. During this law went not from my proved the sincerity of very much affected at it, as my true mother. The maid, who till then had been

been my plague, took an inconceivable friendship for me. She praised me every where, extolling my virtue to the highest; and served me with extraordinary respect. She begged pardon for all that she had made me suffer, and died of grief after my departure.

THERE was a priest of merit, an inward man, who had fallen in with a temptation of taking on him an employ which I was sensible God did not call him to; and therefore, fearing it might be a snare to him, I advised him against it. He promised me he would not, and yet accepted of it; he then avoided me, joined secretly in calumniating me, gradually fell away from grace, and died soon after.

THERE was a Nun in a monastery I often went to, who was entered into a state of purification which every one in the house looked on as distraction; and therefore they locked her up. which had like to have destroyed her. All that went to see her called it phrenzy or melancholy. I knew her to be devout. I requested to see her. As soon as I approached, I felt an impression of her state, being that of purification. I desired of the Superior, that she should not be locked up, nor people admitted to see her, but that she would confide her to my care; for I hoped things would change. I discovered that her greatest pain was at being counted a fool. I advised her to bear the state of foolishness, JESUS CHRIST had been willing to bear it before HEROD. This sacrifice gave her a calmness at once. But as God was willing to purify her soul, he separated her from all those things, to which she had had before the greatest attachment. At last, after she had patiently undergone her sufferings, her "Superior

"Superior writ to me that I was in the right, and "that she was now come out of that state of "dejection, in greater purity than ever." God gave to me alone at that time to know her state. This was the commencement of the gift of discerning spirits, which I afterwards received more fully.

THE winter before I left home was one of the longest and hardest that had been for several years, viz. that of 1680. It was followed with extreme scarcity, which proved to me an occasion of exercising charity. My mother-in-law joined me heartily herein, and appeared to me so much changed, that I could not but be both surprized and overjoyed at it. We distributed at the house ninety-six dozen of loaves every week, but the private charities to the bashful poor were much greater. I kept poor boys and girls employed at work: And God gave such blessings to my alms, that I did not find that my family lost any thing by it. Before the death of my husband, my mother-in-law told him, that I should ruin him with my charities, tho' he himself was so charitable, that in a very dear year, while he was young, he distributed a considerable sum; but now she repeated this to him so often, that he commanded me to set down in writing all the money I laid out, both what I gave for the expence of the house, and all that I caused to be bought, that from thence he might better judge of what I gave to the poor. This new obligation, which I was brought under, appeared to me so much the harder, as for above eleven years we had been married I never before had the like required of me. What troubled me most was the fear of having nothing to give to such as wanted. However I submitted to it, yet without retrenching

retrenching any part of my charities. I did not indeed set down any of my alms, and yet my account of expences was found to answer exactly. I was much surprized and astonished at it, and esteemed it one of the wonders of providence, for I saw plainly it was but given out of thy treasury, oh my God, that made me more liberal of what I thought was the Long's. and not mine. Oh if we but knew how far charity, instead of wasting or lessening the substance of the donor, blessed, increased and multiplied it profusely; how much is there in the world of useless dissipation, which if properly applied, might amply serve for the subsistence of the poor, and would abundantly be restored. and amply rewarded to the families of those who gave it.

In the time of my greatest pains, some years after my husband's death (for they begun three years before my widowhood, and lasted four years after) my footman came one day to tell me, for I was then in the country, that there was in the road a poor soldier dying. I made him be brought in, and having ordered a separate place to be made ready for him, I kept him above a fortnight. His malady was a flux, which he had taken in the army. It was so stinking and nauseous, that though the domesticks were charitably inclined, no body could bear to come near him. I went myself to take away his vessels. But never did I any thing of the kind which was so hard to me. When I emptied them, there was such an intolerable stench, that I was ready to faint. I frequently made efforts for a full quarter of an hour at a time. It seemed as if my very heart was going to come up; yet. I never desisted from doing it. I sometimes kept poor

" Superior writ to me that I was in the 106 "that she was now come out of t " dejection, in greater purity than gave to me alone at that time to ki This was the commencement discerning spirits, which I after more fully.

Or _{. . v}ery ceived THE winter before I left he eque to longest and hardest that h ..ughter I years, viz. that of 1680. at this extreme scarcity, which p. ... vience was of exercising charity. M was timely Gop held me me heartily herein, and unitely stronger changed, that I could The laws of my and overjoyed at it. , rive up all, to ninety-six dozen of was his private charities to "hough I often greater. I kept ? erore I went, I work: And Gor it, of its being alms, that I did udge of things any thing by it seem to have, my mother-in Lisuraces and sufand to run it him with my magination; it is charitable, multitude of was young ne, (of which but now ? which which he comme of its truth the mon " nord than ever conexperie. war want I have made we care to the divine bou! this point shews of \ dwitself m' u St. MARIE, ID PARIS. h: 1:

ich has promised to those the love of God, an 'd persecutions also. re than an hundred on as thou, my God, aat unshaken firmness in my sufferings, in a in the midst of a furious ssaults me on every side; in ioy, enlargedness and liberty in a most straight and rigorous. 1 have no desire that my imprisonment nd before the right time. I love my Every thing is equal to me, as I have and of my own, but purely the love and will him who possesses me. My senses indeed have not any relish for such things, but my heart is separated from them, and borne over them: And my perseverance is not of myself, but of him who is my life; so that I can say with the Apostle, "It is no more I that live. "but Jesus Christ that liveth in me. "he in whom I live, move, and have my being."

To return to the subject, from which I often wander without reflection. I say then that I was not so uneasy to go with the new catholics as to engage with them, not finding a sufficient attraction to the latter, though I sought for it, I longed indeed to contribute to the conversion of wandering souls, and God made use of me to convert several families before my departure,

N. B. But not to the persecuting of them, as she is falsely accused of.

[†] Some may be apt to call this change from Calvinism to the Romish Church perversion instead of conversion—but this is through ignorance, and not distinguishing between the outward dead form, and the inward living power and grace, which may be enjoyed in every outward profession.

one of which was composed of eleven or twelve persons. Besides, Father La Combe had written to me, to make use of this opportunity for setting off, but did not tell me whether I ought to engage with them or not. Thus it was the providence of my God alone, which ordered every thing to which I was resigned without any reserve: And that hindered me from engaging with them.

ONE day, through infidelity, reflecting humanly on this undertaking of mine, I found my faith staggering, weakened with a fear lest I were under a mistake, which slavish fear was increased by an ecclesiastic at our house, who told me it was a rash and ill-advised design. Being a little discouraged, I opened the bible, and at first met with this passage in Isalah, Fear not thou worm Jacob, and ye men of Israel. I will help thee saith the Lord, and thy Redeemer the holy one of Israel. Chap. lxi 14. and near it, Fear not; for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name; thou art mine: When thou passest through the waters, I will be with thee, &c.

I had a very great courage given me for going, but could not persuade myself that it would be to settle with the new catholics. It was however necessary to see sister Garnier, their Superior at Paris, in order to take our measures together: But I could not go to Paris, because that journey would have hindered me from taking another at the time when I should have been obliged to go off. She then, though much indisposed, resolved to come and see me. In what a wonderful manner, oh my God, didst thou conduct things by thy providence, to make every thing come to the point of thy will!

Every day I saw new miracles, which both amazed and still more confirmed me; for with a paternal goodness thou tookest care of even the smallest things. As she intended setting off, she fell sick: And thou permitted it to fall out so, to give room thereby for a person, who would have discovered every thing, in the mean time to take a journey. As she had given me notice of the day she intended to set off, seeing that day was excessively hot, and so sultry that I imagined that being taken so much tender care of as she was at home, they would not suffer her to begin her journey then (which really proved to be the case, as she afterwards told me) I prayed to the LORD to be pleased to grant a wind to rise, to moderate the violent heat. Scarce had I prayed but there arose suddenly so refreshing a wind, that I was surprized at it: And the wind did not cease during her whole journey.

I WENT to meet her, and brought her to my country-house, in such sort that she was not seen or known of any body. What embarrassed me a little was, that I had two of my domestics who knew her; But as I was then endeavouring the conversion of a lady, they easily believed that it was on this account I had sent for her. and that it was necessary to keep it secret, that the lady might not be discouraged from coming. Though I knew nothing of controversial points, yet Gop so furnished me that I did not fail to answer all her objections, and resolve all her doubts (to such a degree) that she could not but give herself up entirely to God. Though sister Garnier had a good share both of grace and natural understanding, yet her words had not such an effect on this soul as those with which

which GoD furnished me, as she assured me herself. She even could not forbear speaking of it. I felt a movement to beg her of Goo, as a testimony of his holy will concerning me; and he was pleased to grant it (though she did not make her abjuration till after my departure) willing that I should go off without any other assurance, than that his divine Providence was The sister did not deconducting all things. clare her thoughts to me for four days. she told me she would not go with me. At this I was the more surprized, as I had persuaded myself that God would grant to her virtue what he might refuse to my demerits. the reasons she gave appeared to me to be merely human, and void of supernatural grace. made me hesitate a little: Then, taking new courage, through the resignation of my whole self, I said, "As I go not thither for your sake: "I will not fail to go even without you." This surprized her, as she owned to me; for she thought that, on her refusal, I would decline my purpose of going.

I REGULATED every thing, wrote down the contract of association with them as I thought proper. No sooner had I done it, but I felt great perturbation and trouble of mind for it. I told her my pain, and that I had no doubt but God demanded me at Geneva, yet did not let me see that he would have me to be of their congregation. She desired to have some time till after prayers and communion, and that then she would tell me what she thought God required of me. Accordingly he directed her contrary both to her interests and inclination. She then told me, "I ought not to connect myself "with her, that it was not God's design; that "I only

SONE

"I only ought to go with her sisters, and that "when I should be there, Father LA COMBE, (whose letter she had seen) would signify to me "the divine will." I entered at once into these sentiments, and my soul then regained, the sweets of inward peace.

My first thought had been (before I heard of the new catholicks going to GEX) to go directly to GENEVA, as at this time there were catholicks there in service, and otherwise; and to take some little room without any noise, and without declaring myself at first: And as I knew how to make up all sorts of ointments, to heal wounds and especially the king's evil, of which there is abundance in that place, and for which I had a most certain cure, I hoped easily to insinuate myself this way; and with the charities which I should have done to have won over many of the people. I have no doubt but if I had followed this impulse, things would have succeeded better: But I thought I ought rather to follow the sentiments of the Bishop than my own. What am I saying? Has not thy eternal word, oh my God, had its effect and accomplishment in me? Man speaks as man: But when we behold things in God, we see them in far other lights. Yes, my LORD, thy design was to give GENEVA not to my cares, words or works, but to my sufferings: For the more I see things appear hopeless, the more do I hope for the conversion of that city by a way known to thee only: Yes, oh GENEVA, thou shalt see the truth flourish again within thy walls, which error has banished from them: And very happily shall those words be verified in thy favour, which are inscribed on thy townhouse: After darkness light; though now thy

sons take them in a quite contrary sense. One day shalt thou be illuminated with the light of truth, and that beautiful temple of St. PETER shall again have the advantage of the pure gospel. How true is it in one sense, oh my LORD, that thou hast made me the daughter of the cross of GENEVA, and how heartily would I give my blood to see thy cross sprout up there! Father LA COMBE has told me since, that he had had a strong impulse to write to me, not to engage with the new catholicks; that he believed it not to be the will of God concerning me; but he omitted doing it. As to my director M. Bertot, he died four months before my departure. I had some intimations of his death, and it seemed as if he bequeathed me a portion of his spirit to help his children.

I was seized with a fear, that the check I had felt, at stripping myself (in favour of the new catholicks, of what I had designed for Geneva) was a stratagem of nature, which does not love to be stripped. I wrote to sister Garnier to get a contract drawn up according to my first memorial. God permitted me to commit this fault, to make me the more sensible of his protection over me.

END OF THE FIRST PART.

THE LIFE

OF

LADY GUION.

PART II. CHAP I.

I WENT off, in a strange renunciation, and in great simplicity, scarce able to render the reason of what made me in such a manner quit my family, which I most tenderly loved, being without any positive assurance, yet hoping even against hope itself. I went to the new Catholicks at Paris, where providences wrought wonders to conceal me. They sent for the Notary, who had drawn up the contract of engagement. When he read it to me, I felt such a repugnance to it, that I could not bear to hear it to the end, much less sign it. The Notary wondered at it; and much more so, when Sister GARNIER came in, and told him herself, that there needed no contract of engagement. — I was enabled through divine assistance, to put my affairs in very great order, and to write sundry letters by the inspiration of the Spirit of God, and not my own spirit. This was what I had never expeperienced before. But was given me at that time only as a beginning, and has since been granted me much more perfectly, as I shall relate in the sequel.

I HAD two domesticks, whom it was very difficu

difficult for me to discharge, as I did not think to take them with me. Yet if I had left them, they would have told of my departure; and I should have been sent after; as I was when it was known. But God so ordered it that they were willing to follow me: They were of no use to me, and soon after turned into France. I took with me only my little daughter, and two maids to serve us both. We set off in a boat upon the river, though I had taken places in the stage-coach, in order that, if they searched for me in it, they might not find me. I went to Melun* to wait for it there.

IT was surprizing that, in this boat the child without adverting to what she did, could not forbear making crosses, employing a person to cut her bulrushes for that purpose. She then put round me, all over, above three hundred of them. I let her do it, and inwardly apprehended that it was not without its mystery. I felt an interior certainty that I was going to meet with crosses in abundance; and that this child was sowing the cross, for me to reap it. Sister GAR-NIER who saw, that they could not restrain her from covering me with crosses, said to me, "What that child does appears to be mysteri-"ous;" and turning to the little girl, she said, "give me some crosses too, my pretty pet;" "No, she replied, they are all for my dear "mother;" but gave her one to stop her importunity, then continued putting more on me: After which she desired some river-flowers, which thoated on the water, to be given her; and braiding a garland, she put it on my head, and said

Melun is a town on the river Seyne, 25 miles south-east trum Paris.

said to me, "After the cross you shall be "crowned." I admired all this in silence, and offered myself up to the pure love of God, as a victim, free and willing to be sacrificed to him. *

Some time before my departure, a particular friend of mine, who is a true servant of God, related to me a vision she had had respecting me. "She saw my heart surrounded with thorns; "that our Lord appeared in it well pleased; that, "though the thorns seemed likely to tear it, "yet, instead of doing that, they only rendered "it fairer, and our Lord's approbation the "stronger."

In my way, at Corbeil, † I met with the priest whom God had first made use of, so powerfully to draw me to his love. He approved of my design to leave all for the Lord; but he thought I should not be well suited with the new catholicks. He told me some particular things about them, to shew that our leadings were incompa-He gave me a caution not to let them know that I walked in the inward path; that, if I did, I must expect nothing but persecutions from them. But it is in vain to contrive to hide, when Gop sees it best for us to suffer, and when our wills are utterly resigned to him, and totally passed into his. Oh King of divine lovers! How didst thou strike on thyself, in all the justice of God: And this soul devoted to imitate, and be conformable to thee, being

This little daughter lived to be married to the Count de Vaux, as we shall see in the third part, Chap. xi.

[†] Corbeil a little town on the river Seyne, 16 miles south from Paris,

cloathed in thy righteous indignation against its own transgressions, strikes on itself in thy justice. Oh admirable thing, only known by experience!

At Paris I gave the new catholicks all the money I had. I reserved not to myself a single penny, rejoicing to be poor after the example of JESUS CHRIST. I brought from home nine thousand livres: As by my donation I had reserved none to myself, and by a contract lent them six thousand; this six thousand has returned to my children, but none of it to me, which gives me no trouble; for poverty, thus procured, makes my riches. The rest I gave entirely to the sisters who were with us, as well to supply their travelling expences, as for their beginning to buy furniture. I did not reserve so much as my linen for my own use, putting it in the common repository. I had neither a locked. coffer, nor purse. I had brought but little linen for fear of mistrust; and lest, in wanting to carry off clothes, I should have been discovered. My persecutors have not failed to report that I had brought great sums from home, which I had imprudently expended, and given to the relations of Father La Combe, which is as false, as it is true I had not a penny; and that, on my arrival at Annecy, a poor man asking alms, I, having nothing else, gave him the buttons from my sleeves. At another time I gave a poor man a little ring, quite plain, in the name of Jesus Christ, which I had worn as a token of my marriage with him.

We joined the flying stage at Melun, where I left sister Garnier, and went on with the other sisters, with whom I had no acquaintance.

These

These carriages were very fatiguing, and I got no sleep through so long a journey, and though my daughter, a very tender child, only five years of age, got scarce any, yet we bore so great a fatigue, without falling sick by the way; and this child had not an hour's uneasiness, though she was only three hours in bed every night; at another time, half this fatigue, or even the want of rest, would have thrown me into a fit of sickness. Gop only knows both the sacrifices which he induced me to make, and the joy of my heart in offering up every thing to him. Had I kingdoms and empires, methinks I should yield them up with still more joy, to give him the higher marks of my love. -But is it a quitting any thing to quit it for him?

As soon as we arrived at the inn, I went to church and stayed there till dinner time. In the coach my divine LORD communed with me, and in me, in a manner which the others could not comprehend, and indeed did not perceive; the cheerfulness I shewed, in the greatest dangers, encouraged them. I even sang hymns of joy at finding myself disengaged from the riches, honours and entanglements of the world. God in such a manner protected us that he seemed to be to us a pillar of fire by night, and a pillar of a cloud by day. We passed over a very dangerous spot between Lyons* and Chambery. Our carriage broke at coming out of it. Had it happened a little sooner, we must have perished.

^{*} Lyons, capital of Lyonois, at the confluence of the rivers Rhone and Saone, 225 miles S. E. from Paris, and 45 miles W. from Chambery the capital city of Savoy, which last is 45 miles S. from Geneva.

We arrived at Annecy on Magdalene's eve. 1681: And on Magdalene's day the bishop of Geneva performed divine service for us, at the tomb of St. Francis de Sales. There I renewed my spiritual marriage with my Redeemer; as I did every year on this day. There also I felt a sweet remembrance of that Saint, with whom our LORD gives me a singular union. I say union: For it appears to me that the soul in God is united with the saints, and the more so as they are the more conformable to him: And it is an union of unity which it pleases God sometimes to revive, and awaken in the soul for his own glory; at such times those saints are rendered more intimately present to that soul in Gop: And this revival is asit were an holy intercourse of friend with friend, in him who unites them all in one immortal tie. Generally all continues hid with Jesus Christ in God.

That day we left Annecy; and on the next went to prayers at Geneva, at the house of the French resident. I had much joy at the communion; and it seemed to me as if God more powerfully united me to himself. And there I prayed to him for the conversion of that great people. That evening we arrived late at Gex, where we found only bare walls; though the Bishop of Geneva had assured us that the house was furnished, as undoubtedly he believed it to be. We lodged at the house of the sisters of the charity, who were so kind as to give us their beds.

I was in great pain of mind for my daughter, who visibly fell away. I had a strong desire to place her with the *Ursulines* at *Tonon*. My heart was so affected on her behalf, that I could not forbear

forbear weeping in secret for her in bed. Next day I said, "I would take my daughter to Tonon, "and leave her there, till I should see how we " might be accomodated here." They opposed it strongly, after a manner which seemed very hard-hearted as well as ungrateful, seeing she was just worn away to a skeleton. I looked upon the poor child as a victim, whom I had imprudently sacrificed. I wrote to Father LA COMBE, intreating him to come to see me, to consult together thereupon; thinking I could not in conscience keep her in this place any longer. Several days passed without my having any answer. In the mean time I became resigned to the will of God, whether to have succour or not. rower bother light much as marke of the first

CHAP. II. buyally of

the new news turns of the Land Philips distant

OUR Lord who took pity on the lamentable condition of my daughter, so ordered it, that the Bishop of Geneva wrote to Father La Combe, to come as speedily as possible to see us, and to console us. As soon as I saw that Father, I was surprized to feel an interior grace, which I may call Communication; and such as I had never had before with any person. It seemed to me that an influence of Grace came from him to me, through the innermost of the soul; and returned from me to him, in such sort that

.... Like a tide of grace wing on into the This is a pure and alone operates, and and even increased be-... : uion exempt from all weak-. . wif-interest, which causes with it, to rejoice in beas well as those beloved. sees and afflictions: an union s - and of the presence of the body: times absence makes not more .. verence more present; an union Nor can it ever be experienced but souls as are united to Gop. were telt such an union of this sort . sac, it then appeared to me quite new, wer heard of the like. I had no doubt was from God; so far from turning the ... it tended to draw it more deeply t dissipated all my pains, and es-... can me in the most profound peace.

the related to me the mercies God had shown him, and several extraordinary things, which gave me at first some fear. I suspected some illusion, especially in such things as datter, in regard to the future; little imagining then, that God would make use of me to draw him from this state, and bring him into that of valid faith. But the grace, which flowed from him into my soul, recovered me from that fear, as I saw it joined with extraordinary humility; and that far from being elevated with the gifts which God had liberally conferred on him, or with his own profound learning, no person could have

have a lower opinion of himself than he had-He told me "As to my daughter, it would be "best for me to take her to Tonon, where he "thought she would be very well situated." And as to myself, after I had mentioned to him my dislike to the manner of life of the new Catholicks, he told me, "that he did not think "that it would be my proper place to be long-"with them; but that it would be best for me "to stay there, free from all engagements, till "Gop, by the guidance of his providence, "should make known to me how he would dis-"pose of me, and draw my mind to the place "whither he would have me to remove." I had already begun to awake regularly at midnight, in order to pray. At this time I awoke with these words suddenly put in my mind, "It "is written of me, I will do thy will, oh my "Gop." This was accompanied with the most pure, penetrating, and powerful communication of grace that I had ever experienced. And here I may remark, that though the state of my soul was already permanent in newness of life; vet this new life was not in that immutability in which it has since been. To speak properly, it was a beginning life and a rising day, which goes on increasing unto the full meridian; a day never followed by night; a life which fears death no more, not even in death itself: because he who has suffered the first death, shall no more be hurt of the second, From midnight I continued on my knees till four o'clock in the morning, in prayer, in a sweet intercourse with God, and did the same also the night following.

Next day, after prayers, Father La Combe told me, that he had had a very great certainty that I was a stone which God designed for the foundation

foundation of some great building. But what that building was he knew no more than I. After whatever manner then it is to be, whether his divine Majesty will make use of me in this life, for some design known to himself only, or will make me one of the stones of the new and heavenly JERUSALEM, it seems to me that such stone cannot be polished, but by the strokes of the hammer; and that our Lord has given to this soul of mine the qualities of the stone, viz. firmness, a resignation, like insensibility, to endure hardness and the operations of his hand.

I CARRIED my little daughter to the *Ursulines* at Tonon. That poor child took a vast fondness for Father La Combe, saying, "He is a good Fa-"ther, one from God." Here I found a hermit, whom they called Anselm. He was a person of the most extraordinary sanctity, that had appeared for some time. He was from Geneva: and God had miraculously drawn him from thence, at twelve years of age. He had (with the permission of the Cardinal, at that time Archbishop of Aix in *Provence*) at nineteen years of age taken the habit of hermit of St. Augustine. another lived alone in a little hermitage, where they saw nobody but such as came to visit their. chapel. He had lived twelve years in this hermitage, never eating any thing but pulse with salt, and sometimes oil. Three times a week he lived on bread and water. He never drank wine, and generally made but one meal in twenty-four hours. He wore for a shirt a coarse hair cloth, and lodged on the bare ground. He lived in a continual state of prayer, and in the greatest humility. God had done by him many signal miracles.

This

This good hermit had a great sense of the designs of God on Father La Combe and me. But Gop shewed him at the same time that strange crosses were preparing for us both, and that we were both destined for the aid of souls. I did not find, as I expected, any fit place for my daughter at Tonon. In regard to her, I thought myself like Abraham, when going to sacrifice his son.—Father La Combe, accosting me here, said, "welcome, daughter of Abraham!" I found little encouragement to leave her there, and could still worse keep her with myself, because we had no room; and the little girls whom they took to make Catholicks, were all mixed with us, and had contracted such habits as were pernicious. To leave her there I thought not right. The language of the country, where scarce any one understood French, and the food, which she could not take, being so far different from ours, were great hardships. All my tenderness for her was awakened, and I looked on myself as her destroyer. I experienced what Hagar suffered when she put away her son Ishmael in the desart, that she might not be forced to see him perish. I thought, if I had ventured to expose myself, I ought at least to have spared my daughter; as the loss of her education, and even of her life, appeared to me inevitable. Every thing looked black in regard to her.

I THOUGHT that, with her natural disposition and fine qualities, she might have shined and attracted admiration, if educated in France, and been likely to have such offers for marriage, as she could never hope to meet with in this poor country; in which, if she should recover, she would never be likely to be fit for any thing. Here she could eat nothing of what was got for

All her subsistence was only some spoontuis of unpleasant and disagreeable broth, which I forced her to take against her will. I seemed like a second Abraham, holding the knife over her to destroy her. Our Lord would have me make a sacrifice to him, without any consolation. and plunged in sorrow, night was the time which gave vent to it. He made me see, on one side, the grief of her grand-mother, if she should hear of her death, which she would impute to my taking the child away from her; and the great reproach it would be accounted among all the family. The gifts of nature she was endowed with were now like pointed darts which pierced me. I believe that God so ordered it, to purify me from too human an attachment, which was still so ready to stick close to me. For after I returned from the Ursulines at Tonon, they changed her manner of diet, and gave her what was suitable to her delicacy; whereby, in a short time she recovered finely.

CHAP. III.

there was a general outery. Those with the most violence upon a wife the human spiritualists; Father de la wife to me, that all persons of learning, with the gown and the sword, united in censuring

sensuring me. To alarm me still more, he informed me that my mother-in-law, with whom I had trusted my younger son and my children's substance, was fallen into a state of childhood. This however was very false.

I ANSWERED all these thundering letters as the spirit dictated. My answers were thought very just, and were well relished, whereby those violent exclamations were soon changed into applauses. Father la Mothe appeared to change his censures into esteem: but it did not hold long. Self-interest threw him back again; being disappointed in his hopes of a pension, which he expected I would have settled on him. Also Sister Garnier, whatever was her reason, changed and declared against me.

HERE I both cat and slept little. The food which was given us was rotten and full of worms. by reason of the great heat of the weather, and being kept too long; insomuch that what I should have formerly beheld with abhorrence now became my only nourishment; and yet every thing was rendered easy to me. In God I found, with increase, every thing which I had lost for him. That spirit, which I once thought I had lost in a strange stupidity, was restored to me with inconceivable advantages. I was astonished myself. I found there was nothing which it was not fit for, or in which it did not Those who observed it said, "I had "a prodigious capacity." Though I well knew that I had but a poor one; but that in God my spirit had received a quality which it had never had before. I thought I experienced something of the state which the Apostles were in, after they had received the Holy Ghost. I knew, I comI comprehended, I understood, I was enabled to do every thing requisite. I had every sort of good thing, and no want of any thing. I remembered that fine passage of wisdom, All good things came to me with her. Wisdom of Sol vii. 2. When Jesus Christ the eternal wisdom is formed in the soul, after the death of the first Adam, it finds in him all good things communicated to it.

Some time after my arrival at Gex, the Bishop of Geneva came to see us. He was so clearly. convinced, and so much affected, that he could not forbear expressing it. He opened his heart to me on what God had required from him. He confessed to me his own deviations and infidelity. Every time, when I spoke to him, he entered into what I said, and acknowledged it to be the truth; as indeed it was the spirit of truth which inspired me to speak to him, without which I should be only a mere simpleton. And yet as soon as persons who sought for preeminence, and could not suffer any good but what came from themselves, spoke to him, he was so weak as to let himself be imposed on with impressions against the truth. This foible, with others, has hindered him from doing all the good, which otherwise he might have done in his diocese.

AFTER I had spoken to him, he said, "he "had it in his mind to give me Father La Combe "for director; for that he was a man illuminat"ed of God, who well understood the inward "path, and had a singular gift of pacifying "souls" These were his own words. Greatly was I rejoiced, when the Bishop appointed him, seeing thereby his authority united with the grace which

which already seemed to have given him to me, by an union and effusion of supernatural life and love. - The fatigues I had, and watchings with my daughter, threw me into a violent disorder, attended with exquisite pains. The physicians judged me in danger, and yet the Sisters of the house quite neglected me: Especially her who had the care of the economy, she was so penurious, that she did not give me what was necessary to sustain life. I had not a penny to help myself with, as I had reserved nothing to myself. And beside, they at that time received all the money which was remitted me from France, which was very considerable. Thus I practised poverty, and was in necessity even among those to whom I had given all. They wrote to Father La Combe, desiring him to come to me, as I was so extreme ill. On hearing of my condition, he was so touched with compassion, as to walk on foot all night, it being eight great leagues, but he travelled no otherwise in that, as in every thing else endeavouring to imitate our LORD JESUS CHRIST*.

As soon as he entered the house, my pains abated: And when he had prayed and blessed me, laying his hand on my head, I was perfectly cured, to the great astonishment of my physicians; who were not willing to acknowledge the miracle; being not well pleased, as they knew that we were come on a religious motive, and their sentiments and profession was so op-

posite

^{*} Singularly devoted to God, and faithful to the sight of duty, which, in the land of darkness, was given him, Father La Combe appears to have been a laborious good man in his station, not shunning the cross, or shrinking from persecutions; and at last, for his fidelity thrown into prison, where, as far as appears, he ended his days.

posite to ours.—These sisters themselves advised me to go to my daughter, to take milk for a fortnight. Father La Combe returned with me. A violent storm arose on the lake, which made me very sick, and seemed likely to overset the But the hand of Providence remarkably appeared in our favour; so much that it was taken notice of by the mariners and passengers. who looked upon Pather La Combe as a saint. Thus we arrived at Tonon, where I found myself so perfectly recovered, that, instead of making and using the remedies I had proposed, I went into a retreat, and stayed there twelve days. Here I made vows of perpetual chastity, poverty and obedience, to wit, readily to obey whatever I should believe to be the will of God, also to obey the church, and to honour Jesus Christ in such a manner as he pleased.

At this time I found that I had the perfect chastity of love to God, mine being without any reserve, division, or view of interest; -- perfect poverty, by the total privation of every thing that was mine, both inwardly and outwardly; perfect obedience to the will of God, submission to the church, and honour to Jesus Christ in loving himself only; the effect of which soon appeared. When by the loss of ourselves we are passed into God, and returned into our origin, our will is made one and the same with that of GoD, according to the prayer of Christ, "As thou "Father art in me, and I in thee, grant that "they also may be one in us." John xvii. 21. Oh! but it is then that the will is rendered marvellous, both because it is made the will of God, which is the greatest of miracles; and because it works wonders in him: For as it is God who wills in the soul, that will has its effect. has it willed but the thing is done.

Why then, may some say, so many oppressions endured? Why do not these souls, if they have such a power, set themselves free from them? If they had any will to do any thing of that sort, and it were not granted; that would be the will of the flesh, or the will of man, and not the will of God. John i. 13.

I ROSE constantly at midnight, ever waking timely enough to do it. If I wound up my alarm watch, then I used not to wake in time. I saw that God had the care of a father and a spouse over me. When I had any indisposition, and my body wanted rest, he did not awake me; but at such times I felt even in my sleep a singular possession of him. Some years have passed wherein I have had only a kind of halfsleep; but my soul waked the more for God, as sleep seemed to steal from it every other attention. The LORD made it known also to many persons, that he designed me for a mother of a great people, but a people simple and child-like. They took these intelligences in a literal sense, and thought it related to some institution or congregation: But to me appeared nothing else, than the persons whom it pleased Gop that I should afterwards win over to him, to whom I should serve as a mother, through his goodness; giving them the same union of affection for me as that of children for a parent, but an union much deeper and stronger; and giving me all that was necessary for them, to bring them to walk in the way by which he would lead them, as I shall shew in the sequel, when I shall speak of that state of maternity, or motherhood.

sporess what I am now is thing of it were my or the difficulty of exsouls because few souls w little known, and so nat I have never read of and say something of the was then in, if it serves ing to be of the number of my : erves such as are already my Live them to let God glorify him-... us manner, and not after their ... yak my pains well employed. If which they do not compreit is to themselves, and they will were by experience than from any v: For expression never equals

blackening it as I had feared.

In re
blackening else could equal. In re
blackening it as I had feared.

blackening it

was become void of every human inclination, both natural and spiritual, and only inclined of God to whatever he pleased, and in whatever manner he pleased. This vastitude, or enlargedness, which is not bounded by any thing, however plain or simple it may be, increases every day; so that my soul in partaking of the qualities of her spouse, seems also to partake of his immensity. My prayer was in an openness and singleness inconceivable. I was as it were borne up on high, out of myself. I believe God was pleased to bless me with this experience, at the beginning of the new life, to make me comprehend, in favour of other souls, this passage of the soul into God.

WHEN I went to confess, I felt such an immersion of the soul into him, that I could scarcely speak. This ascension of the spirit, wherein God draws the soul so powerfully, not into its own inmost recess, but into himself, is not operated till after the mystic death, wherein the soul actually comes out of itself to pass into its divine object. I call it death, that is to say, a passage from one thing to another: And it is truly a happy passover for the soul, and its passage into the promised land. The spirit which is created to be united to its own principle, (or origin) has so powerfully a tendency to it, (that is, to Gop) that if it were not stopt by a continual miracle, its moving quality would cause the body to be drawn after it whithersoever it would, by reason of its impetuosity and noble descent: But Gop has given it a terrestrial body to serve for a counterpoise. This spirit then, created to be united to its origin, without any medium or interstice, feeling itself drawn by its divine object, tends to it

with an extreme violence; in such sort that Gop. suspending for some time the power which the body has to hold back the spirit, it follows with ardency: But when it is not sufficiently purified to pass into God, it gradually returns back to itself; and as the body resumes its own quality, it turns to the earth. The saints who have been the most perfect have advanced to that degree. as to have nothing of all this; and some have lost it towards the end of their lives, becoming single and pure as the others, because they then had in reality and permanence, what they had at first only as transient fruitions, in the time of the prevalence or dominion of the body. certain then that the soul, by death to itself. passes into its divine object: And it is what I then experienced. I found, the farther I went, the more my spirit was lost in its Sovereign, who attracted it more and more to himself. And he was pleased at first that I should know this for the sake of others, and not for myself only. Indeed he drew my soul more and more into himself, till it lost itself entirely out of sight, and could perceive itself no more. It seemed at first to pass into him. As one sees a river pass into the ocean, lose itself in it, its water for a time distinguished from that of the sea, till it gradually becomes transformed into the same sea, and possesses all its qualities; so was my soul lost in God, who communicated to it his qualities, having drawn it out of all that it had of its own. Its life is an inconceivable innocence, not known or comprehended of those who are still shut up in themselves (or only live to themselves).

THE joy which such a soul possesses in its God is so great, that it experiences the truth of those.

those words of the royal Prophet, "All they "who are in thee, O LORD, are like persons "ravished with joy." To such a soul the words of our LORD seem to be addressed, "Your joy "no man shall take from you." John xvi. 22. It is as it were plunged in a river of peace. Its prayer is continual. Nothing can hinder it from praying to Gop, or from loving him. It amply verifies these words in the Canticles, "I "sleep, but my heart waketh;" for it finds that even sleep itself does not hinder it from praying. Oh unutterable happiness! Who could ever have thought that a soul, which seemed to be in the utmost misery, should ever find a happiness equal to this? Oh happy poverty, happy loss, happy nothing, which gives no less than Gop himself in his own immensity, no more circumscribed to the limited manner of the creature, but always drawing it out of that, to plunge it wholly into his own divine Essence.

THEN the soul knows that all the states of self-pleasing visions, openings, extasies and raptures, are rather obstacles, that they don't serve this state which is far above them; because the state, which has supports, has pain to lose them: and yet cannot arrive at this without such loss. In this are verified the words of an experienced Saint; "When I would, says he, possess nothing "through self-love, every thing was given me without going after it." Oh happy dying of the grain of Wheat, which makes it produce an hundred fold! The soul is then so passive, so disposed equally to receive from the hand of God either good or evil, as is astonishing. It receives both the one and the other without any selfish emotions, letting them flow and be lost as they come. They pass away as if they did not touch. 09 AFTER

AFTER I finished my retreat with the Ursulines. at Tonon, I returned through Geneva; and, having found no other means of conveyance. the French Resident lent me a horse. knew not how to ride on horseback, I made some difficulty of doing it: But as he assured me that it was a very quiet horse, I ventured to mount him. There was a sort of a Smith who looking at me with a wild haggard look, struck the horse a blow on the back, just as I had got upon him, which made him give a leap. He threw me on the ground with such force that they thought I was killed. I fell on my temple. My cheek bone was broke, and two of my teeth driven into my head. I was supported by an invisible hand: And in a little time I mounted as well as I could on another horse, and had a man by my side to keep me up.

My relations left me in peace at Gex, testifying their esteem for me: And as they had heard at Paris of my miraculous cure, it made a great noise there. Many persons in reputation for sanctity then wrote to me. I received letters from Madamoiselle De Lamoignon, and another young lady, who was so moved with my answer. that she sent me a hundred Pistoles for our house. and let me know beside, "that, when we wanted "money, I had only to write to her; and that " she would send me all I could desire." They talked in Paris of printing an account of the sacrifice I had made, and inserting in it the miracle of my sudden recovery. I don't know what prevented it: But such is the inconstancy of the creature, that this journey, which drew upon me at that time so much applause, has served for a pretext for the strange condemnation which has since passed upon me. CHAP

CHAP. V.

MY near kinsfolks did not signify any eager desire for my return. The first thing they proposed to me, a month after my arrival at Ger, was not only to give up my Guardianship, but to make over all my estate to my children, and to reserve an annuity to myself. This proposition, coming from people who regarded nothing but their own interest, to some might have appeared very unpleasing; but it was in no wise so to me. I had not any friend to advise with. I knew not any one whom I could consult about the manner of executing the thing, as I was quite free and willing to do It appeared to me that I had now the means of accomplishing the extreme desire I had of being conformable to Jesus Christ, poor, naked, and stript of all. They sent me an article to execute, which had been drawn under their inspection, and I innocently signed it, not perceiving some clauses which were inserted therein. It expressed that, when my children should die, I should inherit nothing of my own estate, but that it should devolve to my collateral kindred. There were many other things, which appeared to be equally to my disadvantage. Though what I had reserved to myself was sufficient to support me in this place; yet it was scarce enough to do so in some others. I then gave up my estate with more joy, for being thereby conformed to Jesus Christ, than they could have by it who asked it from me. It is what I have never repented of, nor had any uneasiness about. What pleasure to lose all and to quit every thing for God! The love of poverty, thus contracted, is the kingdom of tranquility.

I forgot to mention that, towards the end of my miserable state of privation, when just ready to enter into newness of life, our Lord illuminated me so clearly to see that the exterior crosses came from him, that I could not harbour any resentment against the persons who procured me them. On the contrary, I felt the tenderness of compassion for them, and had more pain for those which I innocently caused to them, than for any which they had heaped upon me. I saw that these persons feared God. too much to oppress me as they did, had they known it. I saw his hand in it, and I felt the pain which they suffered, through the contrariety of their humours. It is hard to conceive the tenderness which Gop gave me for them, and the desire which I have had, with the utmost sincerity, to procure them every sort of advantage.

AFTER the accident which befel me, of the fall from the horse, from which I soon wonderfully recovered, the devil began to declare himself more openly mine enemy, to break loose and become outrageous. One night, when I least thought of it, something very monstrous and frightful presented itself. It seemed a kind of Face, which was seen by a glimmering blueish light*. I don't know whether the flame itself composed that horrible face or appearance; for it was so mixed and passed by so rapidly, that

I could

^{*} Probably (says the translator) this was the contrivance of some evil minded persons to terrify her, perhaps the vile Ecclesiastic, whom she is just going to mention.

I could not discern it. My soul rested in its calm situation and assurance, and it appeared As I rose at midno more after that manner. night to pray, I then heard frightful noises in my chamber, and after I had lain down they were still worse; my bed often shook for a quarter of an hour at a time, and the paper sashes were all burst. Every morning while this continued, they were found shattered and torn, yet I felt no fear. I rose and lighted my wax candle at a lamp which I kept in my chamber, because I had taken the office of Sacristan, or (Vestry Nun) and the care of waking the sisters at the hour they were to rise, without having once failed in it for my indispositions, ever being the first in all the observances: I made use of my little light to look all over the chamber, and at the sashes, at the very time the noise was strongest: As he saw that I was afraid of nothing, he left off all on a sudden, and attacked me no more in person: But he stirred up men against me, and that succeeded far better with him; for he found them disposed to do what he prompted them to, zealously, in as much as they counted it a good thing to do me the worst of injuries.

ONE of the sisters whom I had brought, a very beautiful girl, contracted an intimacy with an Ecclesiastic, who had authority in this place. At first he inspired her with an aversion for me, being well assured that if she placed confidence in me, I should advise her not to suffer his visits so frequently.—She was undertaking a religious retreat. That Ecclesiastic was desirous to induce her to make it, in order to gain her entire confidence which would have served as a cloak to his frequent visits. The Bishop of Geneva had given Father La Combe for director to our house, and

as he was going to cause retreats to be made. I desired her to wait for him. As I had gained some share in her esteem, she submitted thereto, even against her inclination, which was to have made it under this Ecclesiastic.—I began to talk to her on the subject of inward prayer, and drew her into the practice of this duty. Our Lord gave such a blessing thereto, that this girl, (one of good parts) gave herself to GoD in right earnest, and with her whole heart; And the retreat completely won her over. She then became more reserved, and on her guard, towards this Ecclesiastic, which exceedingly vexed him. It enraged him both against Father La Combe and me.—This proved the source of the persecutions which afterwards befel me.—The noise in my chamber ended as that commenced.

This Ecclesiastic, began to talk privately of me with much contempt. I knew it, but took no notice. There came a certain Friar to see him, who mortally hated Father La Combe, on account of his regularity. These combined together to force me to quit the house, and to become masters of it themselves. All the means they could devise they studied for that purpose.

My manner of life was such, that in the house I did not meddle in affairs at all, leaving the sisters to dispose of the temporals as they pleased. Soon after my entrance into it I received eighteen hundred livres, which a lady, a friend of mine, lent me to complete our furniture, which I had repaid her at my late giving up of my estate. This sum they received, as well as what I had before given them.—I sometimes spoke a little to those who retired thither to become Catholicks, and our Lord favoured with

with so much benediction what I said to them, that some, whom they knew not before what to make of, became sensible solid women, and exemplary in piety.

I saw crosses in abundance likely to fall to my lot. At the same time these words came into my mind, "Who for the joy that was set "before him endured the cross." Heb. xii. 2. I prostrated myself for a long time with my face on the ground, earnestly desiring to receive all thy strokes, Oh thou who spared not thy own son! Thou couldst find none but him worthy of thee, and thou still findest in him hearts proper for thee,

A rew days after my arrival at Gex, I saw in a sacred and mysterious dream (for as such I very well distinguished it) Father La Combe fastened up to an enormous cross stripped, in like manner as they paint our Saviour. I saw round it a frightful crowd, which covered me with confusion, and threw back on me the ignominy of his punishment. He seemed to have most pain, but I more reproaches than he. I have since beheld this fully accomplished.

The aforesaid Ecclesiastic won over to his party one of our sisters who was the house-steward, and soon after the prioress. I was of a very delicate frame, but the good inclination which I had, did not give strength to my body. I had two maids of my own with me to serve me: Yet as the community had need of one of them for their cook, and the other to attend the door and other occasions, I gave them up, not thinking but they would allow them to serve me sometimes, and assist me in things I was not

able to do myself; for besides this, I let them still receive all my income, they having had already my first half of this years annuity: And vet they would not permit either of my maidservants to do any thing for me. By my office of Sacristan I was obliged to sweep the church which was large, and they would not let any one help me in it. I have several times fainted away over the broom, and have been forced to rest myself in little corners quite spent. This obliged me to beg them, that they would suffer it sometimes to be swept by some of the lusty country girls which were there, new catholicks, which at last they had the charity to consent to. But what most embarrassed me was, that I never had washed, and was now obliged to wash all the vestry linen. I took one of my maids to help me because in attempting it by myself, I had done up the linen most awkwardly. But these sisters pulled her by the arms out of my chamber, telling her she should do her own bu-I let it quietly pass, without making any objection to it. The other good sister, that girl I just mentioned, grew more and more feryent, by the practice of prayer in her dedication of herself to the Lord, more and more tender in her sympathy with me, which irritated this Ecclesiastic; insomuch that, after all his impotent attempts here, he went off to Annecu. in wher to sow discord, and to effect more miswhich to Father La Combe.

CHAP. VI.

HE went directly to the Bishop of Geneca, who till then, had manifested much esteem and kindness for me, and persuaded him, "that "it would be proper to secure me to that house, "to oblige me to give up to it the annual in-"come I had reserved to myself; and to engage "me thereto, by making me prioress." He had gained such an ascendant over the Bishop, that the people in the country called him the little Bishop. Wherefore he drew him to enter heartily, and with zeal into this proposition, and to resolve to bring it about whatever it should cost him.

THE Ecclesiastic, having so far carried his point, and being swelled with his success in this first essay, no longer kept any measures in regard to me. He began with causing all the letters which I sent, and those which were directed to me, to be stopt; in order to have it in his power to make what impressions he pleased on the minds of others, and that I should never be able to know it, nor detend myself, nor to give or send to my friends any account of the manner in which I was treated. One of the maids I had brought wanted to return, as she could have no rest in this place, and the other that remained was infirm, and too much taken up by others to help me in any As Father La Combe was to come, I thought he would soften the violent spirit of this man, and that he would give me proper advice.

In the mean time they proposed to me the engagement gagement, and the post of prioress. I answered. "that as to the engagement it was impossible "for me, since my vocation was elsewhere. And "I could not regularly be the prioress, till after " passing through the noviciate, in which they "had all served two years before their being "engaged; that when I should have done as "much I should see how God would inspire "me." The prioress replied pretty tartly, "that " if I would ever leave them it were best for me "to do it immediately." Yet I did not offer to retire, but continued still to act as usual. However I saw the sky gradually thickening, and storms gathering on every side. The prioress then affected a milder air. She assured me, "that she had a desire as well as I, to go to "Geneva; that I should not engage, but only " promise her to take her with me, if I went "thither." She pretended to place a great confidence in me, and professed a high esteem for As I am very free, and have nothing but uprightness, I let her know "that I had no at-"traction for the manner of life of the new, "catholicks, by reason of the intrigues from "without. Several things did not please me, "because I wanted them to be upright in every "thing." She signified, "that she did not "consent to such things, but because that Ec-" clesiastic told her, they were necessary to give "the house a credit in distant parts, and to "draw charities from Paris." I answered, "that "if we walked uprightly God would never fail He would sooner do miracles for us." I remarked to her, "that when, instead of sin-"cerity, they had recourse to artifice, charity "grew cold, and kept herself shut up. It is "God alone who inspires charity: How then is "it to be drawn by disguises?" Soon

Soon after Father La Combe came about the retreats. (This was the third and last time that he came to Ger.) The prioress, after she had been tampering a good deal with me hereupon, having wrote him a long letter before his coming, and received his answer, which she shewed me, now went to ask him whether she would one day be united to me at Geneva. He answered with his usual uprightness, "Our Lord has made "it known to me that you shall never be esta-" blished at Geneva." And soon after she died. When he had uttered this declaration, she appeared enraged against both him and me, after a surprizing manner. She went directly to that Ecclesiastic, who was in a chamber with the house-steward; and they took their measures together, to oblige me either to engage or retire. They thought that I would sooner engage than retire, and they narrowly watched my letters.

HE requested Father La Combe, which was only with a design to lay snares for him, to preach; which he did on this text, "The King's "daughter is beautiful within." That Ecclesiastic, who was present with his confident, said, "It was preached against him, and was full of "errors." He drew up eight propositions, and inserted in them what the other had not preached, adjusting them as maliciously as ever he could, and sent them to one of his friends at Rome, to get them examined by the sacred congregation, and by the inquisition. Though he had very ill digested them, at Rome they were pronounced good. That greatly disappointed and vexed him. After having been treated in this manner, and opprobriously reviled by him in the most offensive terms, the father, with much mildness and humility told him, "that he was going to Annecy press, to the end that I might take proper measures thereon. I had no other course to take but to retire into a convent. I received a letter informing me that the Nun to whom I had entrusted my daughter was fallen sick, and desiring me to go to her for some time. I shewed this letter to the sisters of our house, telling them, "I had a mind to go; but that if they "ceased to persecute me, and would leave Fa-"ther La Combe in peace, I would return as "soon as the mistress of my daughter should be "recovered." Instead of this, they persecuted me more violently, wrote to Paris against me, stopt all my letters, and sent libels against me round the country.

THE day after my arrival at Tonon, Father La Combe set off for the valley of Aoust* to preach there in the Lent. He had come to take leave of me, and told me, " he should go from thence "to Rome, and perhaps not return, as his supe-"riors might detain him there; that he was "sorry to leave me in a strange country, with-"out succour, and persecuted of every one." replied, "My father, that gives me no pain, I "use the creatures for God, and by his order. "Through his mercy, I do very well without "them, when he withdraws them: And I am "very well content never to see you, if such is "his will, and to abide under persecution." He said he went off well satisfied to see me in such a disposition, and then took his leave and departed.

^{*} Aoust, a Dutchy in *Piedmont*, at the foot of the Alps, sin the North-east of Italy, 65 miles South-east of Geneva, and subject to the king of Sardinia.

As soon as I got to the Ursulines, a very aged and pious priest, who for twenty years past had not come out of his solitude came to find me. He told me, "that he had had a vision relative "to me; that he had seen a woman in a boat " on the lake; and that the Bishop of Geneva, " with some of his priests, exerted all their ef-" forts to sink the boat she was in, and to drown "her; that he continued in this vision above "two hours, with pain of mind; that it seem-"ed sometimes as if this woman were quite "drowned, as for some time she quite disap-"peared; but afterwards she appeared again, "and ready to escape the danger, while the "Bishop never ceased to pursue her. This "woman was always equally calm; but he " never saw her entirely free from him. From " whence I conclude, added he, that the Bishop " will persecute you without intermission."

* I had an intimate friend, wife of that governor of whom I have made some mention. As she saw I had quitted every thing for God, she had a warm desire to follow me. With diligence did she dispose of all her effects, and settle her affairs, in order to come to me: But when she heard of the persecution, she was discouraged from coming to a place, from whence she thought I should be obliged to retire: And soon after she died.

[•] It appears, that she was an instrument in the LORD's hand, in this place, viz. Tonon, of great spiritual benefit to several young women of the village, from what she occasionally mentions farther on, viz. in Chap. 18.

press, to the end that I might measures thereon. I had no of take but to retire into a convent. ne, the perletter informing me that the had entrusted my daughter we scame more desiring me to go to her for so : 2 still shewed this letter to the sisters of whether he desired, as to them. "I had a mind to go France, and to " ceased to persecute me, wie there against "ther La Combe in pea" " soon as the mistress or can receiving the " recovered." ic and his family Instead . me more violently. ceters, opened, on Lerein was sent me stopt all my letters, agn, of immediate round the country.

_ ewiged to put it under The day after The Bishop ... i to me. and had no difficulty Combe set off for For he was disthere in the Lun counts: First, that I of me, and tole ... zension, as he expected. " to Rome, a. ... oughly several times: "riors mig not take his advice "sorry to some other interests he 44 out suc declared against me. replied a is confidant : And it was " use " spread abroad the news 66 Th. . . ant him. They imagined, 66 th: : I should annul the dona-66 : 1 returned; that, having in France, I should find 1 ... ag it; but in that they were 5 in I had no thought of loving poverty of JESUS CHRIST. : he Father acted with caution wrote me some letters; which Bishop of Geneva, and they that he was the only person

rived any letters, to which I ving answers; yet he, instead d with them, became only more ast me.

shop continued to treat me with a shew ct: And yet at the same time he wrote my persons at *Paris*, as did also the sisters the house to all those persons of piety who and wrote letters to me, to bias them as much as possible against me, and to avoid the blame which ought naturally to fall upon them, for having so unworthily treated a person who had given up every thing to devote herself to the service of that diocese; for after I had done this, and was not in a condition to return to France, they treated me extremely ill in every respect. There was scarce any kind of false or fabulous story, likely to gain any credit, which they did not invent to cry me down. my having no way to make the truth known in France, our Lord inspired me with a willingness to suffer every thing, without justifying myself; so that in my case nothing was heard but condemnation, without any vindication. It was not difficult indeed to do this to one who did not defend herself.

I was in this convent, and had seen Father La Combe no farther than I have mentioned: yet they did not cease to publish, both of him and me, the most scandalous stories; as utterly false as any thing could be, for he was then a hundred and fifty leagues from me.

For some time I was ignorant of this. knew that all my letters were kept from me, I seased to wonder at receiving none. I lived in this cause us to live to self. This discouraged them at first, and him also. I saw they were pained, as they have confessed to me since. I said no more of it at that time. But as he is a person of great humility, he bid me unfold what I had wanted to say to him. I told him a part of my dream of the two drops of water; yet he did not then enter into what I said, the time for it not being yet come: But when he came to Ger, to make the retreats, our LORD made known to me, as I was at prayer in the night: that I was his Mother, and he my Son. I told him the circumstances of a certain time past; and he recollected that it was the time of so extraordinary a touch with which the Lord favoured him, that he was quite overwhelmed with contrition. This gave him such an interior renovation, that having retired to pray, in a very ardent frame of mind, he was filled with joy, and seized with a powerful emotion, which made him enter into what I had told him of the wat of Faith. I give these things, as they happen to come to my remembrance, without carrying them on in order.

AFTER Easter, in the year 1682, the Bishop came to Tonon. I had occasion to speak to him, which when I had done, our Lord so pointed my words that he appeared thoroughly convinced: But the persons, who had influenced him before, returned to the charge. He then pressed me very much to return to Gex, and to take the place of Prioress. I gave him the reasons against it which I have mentioned before. I then appealed to him, as a Bishop, desiring him to take care to regard nothing but God in what he should say to me. He was struck into a kind of confusion: And then said to me, "Since you speak to me

"in such a manner, I cannot advise you to it. "It is not for us to go contrary to our vocations; "but do good, I pray you, to this house." promised him to do it; and having received my pension, I sent them a hundred pistoles, with a design of doing the same as long as I should be in the diocese. The Bishop said to me farther, "I love Father La Combe. He is a true servant " of God: And he has told me many things to "which I was forced to assent; for I felt them "in myself: But, added he, when I say so, they "tell me I am mistaken, and that before the end of six months he will run mad." He told me, "he approved of the Nuns, which had been. "under the care and instruction of Father La "Combe, finding them to come up fully to what "he had heard of them." From thence I took occasion to tell him "that in every thing he "ought to refer himself to his own breast, or to "the instructions there immediately received, "and not to others." He agreed to what I said, and acknowledged it to be right: And yet no sooner was he returned than so great was his weakness that he re-entered into his former dispositions. He sent the same Ecclesiastic to tell me that I must engage myself at Gex; and that it was his sentiment. I answered, that I was determined to follow the counsel he had given me, when he had spoke to me as from God, since now they made him speak only as man.

CHAP. VIII.

MY soul was in a state of entire resignation. and very great content, in the midst of such violent tempests. Those persons came to tell me a hundred extravagant stories against Father La Combe. The more they said to me to his disadvantage, the more esteem I felt for him. I answered them, "Perhaps I may never see him "again; but I shall ever be glad to do him-"justice. It is not he who hinders me from "engaging at Ger. It is only because I know "it to be none of my vocation." They asked me, "Who could know that better than the Bishop?" They farther told me, "I was under a decep-"tion, and my state was good for nothing." This gave me no uneasiness, having referred to God the care of requiring, and of executing what he requires, and in whatever manner he demands it.

A soul in this state seeks nothing for itself. but all for God. Some may say, "What then "does this soul?" It leaves itself to be conducted by Gon's providences and creatures. Outwardly its life seems quite common; inwardly, it is wholly resigned to the divine will. The more every thing appears adverse, and even desperate, the more calm it is, in spite of the annoyance and pain of the senses and of the creatures, which, for some time after the new life, raise some clouds and obstructions, as I have already signified. But when the soul is entirely passed into its original Being, all these things no more cause any separation or partition. It finds no more of that impurity which came from self-seeking, from a human manner of acting, from an unguarded word, from any warm emotion or eagerness, which caused such a mist, as it then could neither prevent nor remedy, having so often experienced its own efforts to be useless, and even hurtful, as they did nothing else but still more and more defile it. There is in such case no other way or means of remedy, but in waiting till the sun of righteousness dissipate those fogs, as the only work of purification comes from God only. Afterwards this conduct becomes natural: And then the soul 'can "Though an host say with the royal prophet, "should encamp against me, my heart shall not "fear: Though war should rise against me, in "him will I confide." For then, though assaulted on every side by evil spirits, it continues fixed as a rock. Having no will but for what Gop sees meet to order, be it what it may, high or low, great or small, sweet or bitter, honour, wealth, life or any other object, what can shake its peace? It is true our nature is so crafty that it worms itself through every thing; and a selfish sight is like the basilisk's; it destroys.

TRIALS are suited to the state of the soul, whether conducted by lights, gifts, or extasies, &c. or by the entire destruction of self in the way of naked faith. Both these states are found in St. PAUL. He tells us, "And lest I should "be exalted above measure, through the abun-"dance of revelations, there was given to me a "thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me." He prayed thrice, and it was said to him, "My grace is sufficient for thee; "for my strength is made perfect in weakness." He proved also another state when he thus expressed himself, "Oh wretched man that I am! "Who shall deliver me from the body of this "death?"

"death?" To which he replies, "I thank "God, it is done through Jesus Christ our "Lord." It is he who conquers death in us through his own life. Then there is no longer a sting in death, or thorn in the flesh, capable of paining or hurting any more.

At first indeed, and for a pretty long time after, the soul sees that nature wants to take some part with it in its trials: And then its fidelity consists in withholding it, without allowing it the least indulgence, till it leaves every thing to go on with God in purity as it comes from him. Till the soul be in this state, it always sullies, by its own mixture, the operation of God, like those rivulets which contract the corruption of the places they pass through; but, flowing in a pure place, they then remain in the purity of their source. Unless God through experience make known this guidance to the soul, it can never comprehend it.

On if souls had courage enough to resign themselves to the work of purification, without having any weak and foolish pity on themselves, what a noble, rapid and happy progress would they make! But few are willing to lose the earth. If they advance some steps; as soon as the sea is ruffled, they are dejected, they cast anchor, and often desist from the prosecution of the voyage. Such disorders doth selfish interest and self-love occasion. It is of consequence not to look too much at one's own state, not to lose courage, not to afford any nourishment to selflove, which is so deep-rooted that its empire is not easily demolished.—Often the idea which a man falsely conceives of the greatness of his advancement in divine experience makes him

want it to be seen and known of men, and to wish to see the very same perfection in others. He conceives too low ideas of others, and too high of his own state. Then it becomes apain to him to converse with people too human; whereas a soul truly mortified and resigned would rather converse with the worst, by the order of Providence, than with the best, of its own choice; wanting only to see or to speak to any as Providence directs, knowing well that all beside, far from helping, only hurt it, or at least prove very unfruitful to it.

What then renders this soul so perfectly content? It neither knows, nor wants to know, any thing but what God calls it to. Herein it enjoys divine content, after a manner vast, immense, independent of exterior events; more satisfied in its humiliation, and in the opposition of all creatures, by the order of Providence, than on the throne of its own choice.

On thou who alone conductest these souls. who canst teach ways so hidden and lost, so contrary to the usual spirit of devotion, which is full of itself and its own virtues:—bring hither souls innumerable, which may love thee in the utmost purity. Every other love however vehement and ardent, is not the pure love, but a love mixed with selfishness. These souls are the delight of God, who delights to be with the children of men, (Prov. 8. 31.) that is with souls child-like and innocent, such as are set free from pride, ascribing to themselves only nothingness and sin. They are one in God, to such a degree, that they look at him only, and every thing else in him. Beautiful is that passage of JEREMIAH, "He sitteth alone, and " keepeth

"keepeth silence because he hath borne his yoke "
"upon him." Lam. iii. 28.

WHAT makes the perfection of one state, is only the weak and imperfect beginning of that which follows it, as in the mounting up from a lower class to a higher. The child's state has its beauties and charms in its season, as have all the succeeding stages of the divine life, when rightly disposed and directed. St. PAUL says. The Law was our School-master to bring us unto Christ. (Gal. iii. 29.) But when we are come to him, that master is then rendered of no use. It is he who brings into the perfect liberty of the Sons of God, which liberty flows from the Spirit of God. But what are those souls designed for, which are so dear to him? To be conformed to the Image of his Son. (Rom. viii. **29**, 30.)

IT is here that the apostolic life begins.—But is every one called to that state?—Very few, indeed, as far as I can comprehend; and, of the few that are called to it, fewer still walk in true purity. There is a way of lights, gifts and graces, a holy life in which the creature appears all admirable: As this life is more apparent, so it is more esteemed of such at least as have not the purest light. The souls which walk in the other path are often very little known, for a length of time; as it was with Jesus Christ himself, till the last years of his life. Oh if I could express what I conceive of this state! But I can only stammer about it—I have wandered far from my story, but am not capable of doing otherwise.

CHAP. IX.

BEING, as I have said, with the Ursulines at Tonon, after having spoken to the Bishop of Geneva, and seeing how he changed, just as others turned him, I wrote to him and to Father La Mothe; but all my pains were useless. The more I endeavoured to accommodate matters, the more the Ecclesiastic tried to confound them.—I ceased to meddle.

I HAD a dream that I drew a cord which seemed at first of diamond; but afterwards it appeared to be of iron. I saw storms coming on every side; yet I rested in a profound peace, waiting for the strokes which I could not avoid. I beheld the tempest descend impetuously, without my having done the least thing to contribute to it, or seeing any thing for me to do but peaceably to suffer. One day I was told that the Ecclesiastic had won over the good girl whom I dearly loved. So strong a desire I had had for her perfection that it had cost me much. I should not have felt the death of a child so much as her loss: At the same time I was told how to hinder it, but that human way of acting was repugnant to my inward sense; and these words arose in my heart, Except the LORD build the House, &c.

AND indeed he provided herein himself, hindering her from yielding to this deceitful man, after a manner to be admired, and very thwarting to the designs of him and his associates. As long as I was with her she still seemed wavering and fearful: But oh the infinite goodness of

Gop.

God, to preserve without our aid what without his we should inevitably lose!—I was no sooner separated from her, but she became *immoveable*,

As for me, there scarce passed a day but they treated me with new insults: their assaults came on me at unawares. The new Catholicks. by the instigation of the Bishop of Geneva, the Ecclesiastic, and the sisters at Ger, stirred up all the persons of piety against me, I had but little uneasiness on my own account: If I could have had it on any, it would have been on that of Father La Combe, whom they vilely aspersed, though he was absent. They even made use of his absence, to overset all the good he had done in the country, by his missions and pious labours, which was inconceivably great. At first I was too ready to vindicate him, thinking it jutice to do it. I did not do it at all for myself; and our Lord shewed me that I must cease doing it for him, in order to leave him to be more thoroughly annihilated; because from thence he would draw a greater glory, than ever he had done from his own reputation.

Every day they invented some new slander. No kind of stratagem, or malicious device in their power, did they omit. They came to surprize and ensnare me in my words; but Gon guarded me so well, that therein they only discovered their own malevolence. I had no consolation from the creatures. She who had the care of my daughter behaved roughly to me. Such are the persons who regulate themselves only by their gifts and openings. When they don't see things presently succeed, as they regard them only by their success, and are not willing to have the affront of their pretensions being

being thought uncertain, and liable to mistake, they seek without for supports. As for me who pretended to nothing, I thought all succeeded well, inasmuch as all tended to self-annihilation. On another side, the maid I had brought, and who stayed with me, grew tired out. Wanting to go back again, she stunned me with her complaints, thwarting and chiding me from morning till night, upbraiding me with what I had left, and coming to a place where I was good for nothing. I was obliged to bear all her ill-humours and the clamours of her tongue.

F. La Mothe wrote to me that I was a rebel to my Bishop, staying in his diocese only to give him pain. Indeed, I saw there was nothing for me to do here, so long as the Bishop should be against me. I did what I could to gain his good will: but it was impossible on any other terms than the engagement he demanded, and that I knew to be my duty not to do. This, joined to the poor education of my daughter, affected my heart. When any glimmering of hope appeared, it soon vanished; and I gained strength from a sort of despair.

During this time Father La Combe was at Rome, where he was received with so much honour, and his doctrine so highly esteemed, that the sacred congregation was pleased to take his sentiments on some points of doctrine, which were found to be so just, and so clear, that it followed them. Meanwhile the sister would take no care of my daughter, and when I took care of her, she was displeased. I was not able, by any means to prevail on her to promise me to try to prevent her contracting bad habits. However I hoped that Father La Combe, at his return,

need to be purified in the fire, having undergone that operation; but needs only be cleansed without. So it seemed to be with me at that time.

THERE is also a pain in this state, which is inflicted of God. All the crosses and troubles from without do no more to it than only graze the skin, when compared to this. which is redeemed both from every resistance of the divine Will, and from every selfish practice even of good, has nothing more to fear, or to suffer, from men or devils, though they discharge all their fury on it. Against such a soul indeed all hell is stirred up, and yet all that is little of a suffering to it. Nor could these have any power, were it not given them from above. JESUS CHRIST bore all the avenging justice of God: And it needed God to bear that weight. So it needs a soul transformed and passed into God, to bear the weight of the Father's justice. Such are the souls destined to be victims hereof, and to fill up what is behind of the Sufferings of Christ, for his Body's sake which is the Church. (Col. i. 24.) But what is there behind of his sufferings, since he himself said, "It is finished," (John, xviii. 19.) except the extention thereof in his members? Jesus CHRIST, in the garden, suffered exceedingly, both from the withdrawing of God his Father, and from the weight of the sins of all mankind: So, in his members, their unity with the will of God is so much the greater, as it is less perceived through the weight and force of their sufferings.

CHAP. X.

MY daughter had the small-pox and the pur-They sent for a physician from Geneva, who gave her over. Father La Combe then came in to visit and pray by her. He gave her his blessing; and soon after she wonderfully recovered. The persecutions of the new catholicks against me continued and increased: Yet. for all that, I did not fail to do them all the good in my power. My daughter's mistress came often to converse with me, but much imperfection appeared in her discourses, though they were on religious subjects. Father La Combe regulated many things in regard to my daughter, which vexed her mistress so much, that her former friendship was turned into She had grace; but suffered nature coldness. too frequently to prevail. I told her my thoughts on her faults, as I was inwardly directed to do: But though, at that time, God enlightened her to see the truth of what I said, and she has been more enlightened since; yet the return of her coldness towards me ensued upon it. The debates between her and my sister grew more tart and violent. My daughter, who was only six years and a half old, by her little dexterities, found a way to please them both, chusing to do her exercises twice over, first with the one, then with the other, which continued not long; for as her mistress generally neglected her, doing things at one time, and leaving them at another, she was reduced to learn only what my sister and I taught her. Indeed the vivacity of my sister was so excessive, that, without a particular grace, it was hard to suit one's self to it: And yet she appeared to me to surmount herself in many things. Formerly I could scarce bear her manners; but I have since loved every thing in God, who has given me a very great facility to bear the faults of my neighbour, with a readiness to please and oblige every one, and such a compassion for their calamities or distresses as I never had before.

More easily did I bear the great faults of imperfect souls, than very little ones in such as God had begun to draw toward perfection. feel my heart enlarged with tenderness towards the first, and a certain firmness in regard to the others, not to tolerate in them faults which are so much the more dangerous, as they less distrust them on account of their subtilty. Though it seems that my miseries ought to impose silence on me. I cannot forbear, without suffering much, to reprove those souls for their defects. The more any soul is favoured with eminent grace, the more nearly is it united to me; the more violent also is the weight and suffering I feel for it, if it slip or turn aside ever so little. I discern its foundation and its failings, as if they were outwardly shewn or set before me. mean the inward failings of the mind, for others surprize me not. This view diminishes not the esteem I have for the persons; but it makes me know what they want, and obliges me often to tell it to them.

I HAVE no difficulty to use condescension with imperfect persons; I should be secretly smitten if I failed therein: But with souls of grace I cannot bear this human manner of acting, nor suffer long and frequent conversations. It is a case which few persons are capable of, and which is scarce known. Some religious persons say that

that these conversations are of great service. I believe it may be true for some times, but not for all; for there is a period wherein it hurts, especially when it is of our own choice; the human inclination corrupting every thing. The same things which would be profitable, when God, by his Spirit, draws to them, become quite otherwise, when we of ourselves enter into them. This appears to me so clear, that I prefer being a whole day with the worst of persons, in obedience to God, before being one hour with the best, only from choice and a human inclination.

The order of divine providence makes the whole rule and conduct of a soul entirely devoted to God. While it faithfully gives itself up thereto, it will do all things right and well, and will have every thing it wants, without its own care; because God in whom it confides, makes it every moment do what he requires, and furnishes the occasions proper for it. God loves what is of his own order, and of his own will, not according to the idea of the merely rational or even enlightened man; for he hides these persons from the eyes of others, in order to preserve them in that hidden purity for himself.

But how comes it that such souls commit any faults; because they are not faithful, in giving themselves up to the present moment. Often too eagerly bent on something, or wanting to be over faithful, they slide into many faults, which they can neither foresee nor avoid.—Does God then leave souls which confide in him? Surely no. Sooner would he work a miracle to hinder them from falling, if they were resigned enough to him. They may be resigned as to the general will, and yet fail as to the present moment.

Being

Being out of the order of God, they fall. They renew such falls as long as they continue out of that divine order.—When they return into it, all goes right and well.

Most assuredly if such souls were faithful enough, not to let any of the moments of the order of God slip over, they would not thus fall. This appears to me as clear as the day. As a dislocated bone out of the place in which the economy of divine wisdom had fixed it, gives continual vain till restored to its proper order,—so the many troubles in life, come from the soul not abiding in its place, and not being content with the order of God, and what is afforded therein from moment to moment? If men rightly knew this secret, they would all be fully content and satisfied. But alas! instead of being content. with what they have, they are ever wishing for what they have not; while the soul, which enters into the divine light begins to be in paradise. What is it that makes paradise? It is the order of God, which renders all the saints infinitely content, though very unequal in glory! From whence comes it that so many poor indigent persons are so contented, and that princes and potentates, who abound to profusion, are so wretched and unhappy? It is because the man who is not content with what he has, will never be without craving desires; and he who is the prev of an unsatisfied desire, can never be content.

At a souls have more or less of strong and amount desires, except those which are in the moment. Some have good desires, as to martyrdom for God; others thirst for the martiation of their neighbour, and some pant to

see God in glory. All this is excellent: But he who rests in the divine moment, though exempt from all these desires, is infinitely more content, and glorifies God more. The moment of suffering is the order of God and the desire of what one has does not accompany the thing itself. It is written concerning Jesus Christ, when he drove out of the temple those who profaned it, "The zeal of thine house hath eaten me up." John ii. 17. It was in that moment of the order of God, that these words had their effect. How many times had Jesus Christ been in the temple without such a conduct? Does not he occasionally say of himself, that his hour was not yet come?

THE Saints in glory ever desire, and ever possess God—Yet this can hardly be called a desire; it is rather an appetite which the present good produces, and instead of being restless or painful, but augments the delight of enjoyment:
—It is an energy or flight of the spirit, that enjoys and advances incessantly in God, discovering still new and transporting beauties in him.
—Eternity can never exhaust these infinite treasures of that beauty, which is ever ancient and new.—What they have once known, they know eternally, and yet every moment unfolds and discovers new scenes of wonder, and glory, and ever varying delights!—

THE tendency of the soul to its centre is so strong, that all the impetuosity which we see in inanimate creatures, to return to theirs, are but faint shadows of this bent of the soul to its origin,—for the soul being highly superior, is consequently more powerful in its attraction. But God being infinite, his attraction is unspeakable.

FROM

From this infinite attraction of God. as well as the bent of the soul to follow the draught of the central force, one may judge of the pain of those souls, which are stopped in this violent bent, more or less, according as the obstacles, which hinder them from becoming lost in God, are more or less powerful: As also of the pain of souls in hell, a pain so much the greater as it is accompanied with the despair of ever being united to their centre. The reason we do not feel in this life the strong weight of our separation from, or the force of this powerful attraction to our centre, is because of the body, which amusing itself with created objects, procures a diversion, and takes away the attention of the soul from this attracting virtue of the centre, till the inquietude of its separation hinders it from finding any peaceful rest on earth. in purifying suffer no longer than till the fault or obstruction is taken away—for then the pain ceases, and the degree of their suffering is just in proportion to the guilt or hindrance, which prevents their re-union. And after a fall, they suffer more or less, according to the quality of the fault.—But I wander immoderately.

End of the Year 1682.

CHAP. XI.

A FTER Father La Combe was returned from Rome, well approved, and furnished with testimonials of his life and doctrine, he performed his functions of preaching and confessing as usual. To him I confessed; and he told me at first that I must return, as I have mentioned. I gave him an account of what I had done and suffered in his absence, and what care God had taken of all my concerns. I saw his Providence incessantly extended to the very After having been several smallest things. months without any news of my papers, when some pressed me to write, and blamed my neglect, an invisible hand held me back; my peace and confidence were great herein. I received a letter from the Ecclesiastic at home, which informed me that he had orders to come and see me, and bring me my papers. I had sent for a pretty considerable bundle of things from Paris for my daughter. I heard they were lost on the lake, and could learn no farther tidings about them.

But I gave myself no trouble, I always thought they would be found. The man who had taken the charge of them made a search after them a whole month in all the environs, without hearing any news about them. At the end of three months they were brought to me, having been found in the house of a poor man, who had not opened them, nor knew who brought them thither. Once I had sent for all the money which was to serve me a whole year; the person who had been to receive cash for the bill Gexchange, having put that money in two bags on horse-back, forgot that it was there, and gave the horse to a little boy to lead. The money fell from the horse in the middle of the market at Geneca. That instant I arrived, coming on the other side, and having alighted from my litter, the first thing I found was my money, in walking over it; what was surprising, a great throng was in this place, and not one had perceived it. Many such things have attended me, which to avoid prolixity, I pass by. hese may suffice, to shew the continual protection of God.

THE Bishop of Geneva continued to persecute When he wrote to me, it was with politeness and thanks for my charities at Ger: While at the same time he said to others. "I gave "nothing to that house." He wrote against me to the Ursulines with whom I lived, charging them to hinder me from having any conferences with Father La Combe, for fear of bad consequences. The superior of the house, a man of merit, and the prioress, as well as the community, were so irritated at this, that they could not forbear testifying it to himself. He then excused himself with a pretended respect, saying, I did not mean it that way. They wrote to him. "that I did not see the Father but at the con-"fessional, and not in conference; that they " were so much edified by me, as to think them-" selves happy in having me, and to esteem it "a great favour from God." What they said out of pure charity was not pleasing to the Bishop, who, seeing they loved me in this house. said, that I won over every body to myself, and that he wished I were out of the docese. Though I knew all this, and ' good sisters were troubled

troubled at it, I could have no trouble by reason of the calm establishment which I was in, the will of God rendering every thing equal to me; the creatures, however unreasonable or passionate they appear, not being regarded in themselves but in God; for an habitual faith causes every thing to be seen in God without distinction. Thus when I see poor souls so ruffled for discourses in the air, so uneasy for explanations, I pity them for their want of light. They have reasons, I know, which self-love causes to appear very just.

To relieve myself a little from the fatigue of continual conversation, as my body grew weak, I desired Father La Combe to allow me a retreat, and to give out that he had ordered me to make He told the people so; but they could hardly leave me in repose. It was then that I let myself be consumed by love all the day long. Then also I perceived the quality of a spiritual mother; for Gop gave me what I cannot express for the perfection of souls. This I could not hide from Father La Combe. It seemed to me as if I entered into the inmost recesses of his heart. Our Lord shewed me he was his servant, chosen amongst a thousand, singularly to honour him; but that he would lead him through total death, and the entire destruction of the old man; that he would have me contribute thereto, and be instrumental to cause him to walk in the way in which he had led me first; in order that I might be in a condition to direct others therein, and to tell them the tracks through which I have passed; that God would have us to be conformed, and to become both one in him; that though my soul was more advanced now, yet he should one day pass beyond yond it, with a bold and rapid flight. God knows how I rejoiced herein, and with what joy I would see my children surpass their mother in glory.

In this retreat I felt a strong propensity to write, but resisted it till I fell sick. I had nothing to write about, not one idea to begin with. It was a divine impulse, with such a fulness of grace as was hard to contain, or bear, like mothers full of milk, which suffer much. I opened- this disposition of mine, to Father La Combe. He answered me "that he had a strong" "impulse to command me to write but had not "dared to do it yet, on account of my weakness." I told him, "that weakness was the effect of "my resistance, and I believed it would, through "my writing go off again." He asked me, "But "what is it you will write?" I replied, "I know "nothing of it, nor desire to know, leaving it "entirely to God to direct me." He ordered me to do so. At my taking the pen I knew not the first word I should write; but when I began, suitable matter flowed copiously, nay impetuously; and as I was writing I was relieved and grew better. I wrote an entire treatise on the interior path of Faith, under the comparison of torrents, or of streams and rivers*; and though it is pretty long, the comparison in it holds out to the end.

As the way, wherein God now conducted Father La Combe, was very different from that

^{*} This Treatise was written by her in 1683, entitled *The Torrents*. It has been twice printed in *Holland*, among her spiritual works, in the first Volume in 1704, and more correctly in the second Volume in 1712.

in which he had formerly walked; which had been all light, knowledge, ardour, assurance, sentiments; but now the poor, low, despised path of faith, and of nakedness; he found it very hard to submit thereto, which caused me no little suffering. Who could express what it has cost my heart before he was formed according to the will of God? The more this soul is precious in the eyes of God, the more dearly have I been obliged to pay for it. Mean time the possession which Gob had of my soul became every day stronger, insomuch that I passed whole days without being able to pronounce one word; for God was pleased to make me pass wholly into him by an entire internal transformation*. He became more and more the absolute master of my heart, to such a degree as not to leave me a movement of my own, in order that I might be continually supple to every intimation of his will. This state did not hinder me from condescending to my sister, and the others in the house. Nevertheless the useless things with which they were taken up could not suit my state. That was what induced me to ask leave to make a retreat, to let myself be possessed of him who holds me so closely united to himself after an ineffable manner. At this time he purified me from a relick of nature very subtle and delicate, so that my soul was brought into very great purity. All partitions were utterly consumed. Then it was given me to write in a manner purely divine. All that I had wrote, before the time of my probation, was condemned to the fire. Our Lord united me more closely in his spirit with Father La Combe. He required me to tell him my thoughts, to the very least

^{*} John, xvii. 21, 23. 1 Cor. vi. 17.

of them, or to write them to him as he was often absent. It was a thing which I had never done before, when I might have done it more commodiously. I said with the spouse, (Cant. v. 3.) "I have put off my coat, how shall I put it on? "I have washed my feet, how shall I defile them?" Must my spirit, which is so naked and empty. again be furnished and filled? And after having been subject to God only, must I become so to the creature? I could have wished to avoid it. had I been mistress of myself; but I was taken up with the thought till I had obeyed. Far from having its former purity, the heart became sullied by such thoughts, even though they were of good things: For to trouble the water with a stick of wood, or a staff of gold, it still mud-I found that the stronger the dies it alike. union grew between us, the more we were united to God, and drawn off from human sentiments. I was the more constrained to forgive him nothing which was amiss, to desire the thorough destruction thereof, that God only might reign; and was obliged to tell him faithfully whatever the LORD made known to me that he required of him:—And this was a hard place to pass. was constrained to tell him the essential defects of the sister who took care of my daughter: As he was prepossessed in her favour, from her gifts and graces which she had told him of, he rejected with displeasure what I said about her: But the Lord allowed me not to rest till I told him all I thought of her, in regard to her faults. On every occasion I was forced to suffer for his infidelity. Long has been the martyrdom I have suffered on this account, and beyond whatever can be expressed concerning it.

CHAP. XII.

OUR blessed Lord had fully determined that I should enter into, and experience all his states beginning with the first, and going on even to the last. Reducing me even to a perfect child-like simplicity, he gave me such a wonderful obedience to my director Father La Combe. that into whatever extremity of bodily illness I was plunged, I was immediately cured at his command. I seemed to be a representative of JESUS CHRIST in his childhood, obedient to his Father's will. Also a sign and testimony to this good Father, who having been hitherto conducted by testimonies*, could not get out of that way. In all that was said to him, and all that God caused him to experience, he was ever seeking for some testimonies, reasons or demonstrations. It was the point wherein he had the the most pain to die to himself, and by which he has caused me to suffer so much. Our Load to make him enter the more readily into what he required both of him and of me, gave him the greatest of all testimonies, which was this wonderful obedience; in order to make him see that it did not depend upon me, but that God gave it me for him; when he grew strong enough to bear the loss of every testimony; and God would have him learn to walk without such helps, this obedience was taken from me in such sort, that without an immediate attention thereto, I could no longer obey him. This was ordered to make him enter the more into death to himself, and to deprive him of the support of

^{*} That is to say, sensible Marks, perceptible Proofs, and evident Reasons. Editor's Note.

this testimony; for now all my efforts to revive it were useless. I was obliged to follow the internal dictates of my Sovereign. He gave me this repugnance to obey my external director; but it continued no longer than was necessary to make him lose the support he had drawn from thence, and perhaps I myself also.

I had at that time so ardent a desire for his perfection, and to see him thoroughly die to himself, that I could have wished him all the crosses and afflictions, imaginable (far from pitying him in them) that might conduce to this great and blessed end. Whenever he was unfaithful, or looked at things in any other light than the true one, viz. to tend to this mystic death, I felt myself on the rack, which, as I had till then been so indifferent, very much surprised me. To the Lord I made my complaint, who graciously encouraged me, both on this subject and on that entire dependance on himself which he gave me, which was such that I was like a new born infant.

My sister had brought me a maid*, whom God was willing to give me, to fashion her according to his will, not without some crucifixion to myself, (for I believe it never is to fall out, that our Lord will give me any persons without giving them wherewith to make me suffer for them) whether it be for the purpose of drawing them into a spiritual life, or never to leave me without the cross. She was one on whom the Lord had conferred very singular

^{*} One of those young women who was a prisoner in the Bastile at Paris, twelve years, when Lady Guion was there. Editor's Note.

graces. She was in high reputation in the country, where she passed for a saint. Our Lord brought her to me, to let her see the difference between the sanctity conceived and comprised in those gifts, with which she was endowed, and that which is obtained by our entire destruction, even by the loss of those very gifts, and of all that raised us in the esteem of men. Our Lord had given her the same dependance on me, as I had in regard to Father La Combe, nevertheless with some difference.

This girl fell grievously sick. I was willing to give her all the assistance in my power, but I found I had nothing to do but to command her bodily sickness, or the disposition of her mind; and all that I said was done. It was then that I learned what it was to command by the Word, and to obey by the Word. It was Jesus Christ in me equally commanding and obeying.

SHE, however, continued sick for some time. One day, after dinner. I was moved to say to her, "Rise and be no longer sick." She rose and was cured. The Nuns were very much astonished; and as they knew nothing of what had passed, but saw her walking, who in the morning had appeared to be in the last extremity, they attributed her disorder to vapours.

[Here she relates some other extraordinary matters, for which we refer the reader to the original French.]

Thus are miracles operated by the annihilated soul, in such sort that as this soul is now become nothing, from hence nothing ought to be attributed to it. It does not say, when it feels an impulse

impulse to heal, "be thou healed in the name "of JESUS CHRIST:" For that is a power of doing miracles in the Name of CHRIST: But here it is Christ himself who does the miracle. and who says by that person "Be healed,"-and it is done; Or "Let the devils be gone," and they are gone. When the person says that, it is the divine Word which speaks, and effects what it speaks; the Word which spoke in the beginning, and all things were made. These don't make use of any form of prayers before it. They say what is given them to say. prayed publickly at the resurrection of Lazorus: "But this," he said, "I do because of the people "who stand by, that they may believe that "thou hast sent me." Other servants of Gop. favoured with the gift of miracles, pray, and obtain thereby what they desire: But here it is the Word who uses his own authority, and who acts by the person in whom he lives and reigns.

Two things hereupon are to be observed. One is, that the souls of which I speak don't generally do their miracles by giving any thing, or by simply touching; but it is by the Word, although they sometimes accompany it with a touch. It is the All-powerful Word. The other is, that these miracles require the consent, or at least that there be no opposition, of the party on whom they are to be wrought. Our blessed Long asked those good people whom he healed, "Are ye willing to be healed?" Could there be any doubt of it when the men came to him for that very purpose? Such is the great secret of the operation of the Word, and of the liberty of man. 'Tis not thus on the dead, or on inanimate creatures. He then speaks, and it is done: But in the other case it requires the consent of the soul. IHAVE

I HAVE at sundry times experienced, and felt in myself, how much Gop respects the freedom of man, and even demands his free concurrence: for when I said, "Be healed," or, "Be free from your troubles;" if such persons acquiesced therein, the Word was efficacious, and they were healed. If they doubted, or resisted, though under fair pretexts, as saying, "I shall " be healed when it pleases God, I will not be "healed till he wills it;" or, in the way of despair, "I cannot be healed; I will not quit "my condition," then the word had no effect. I felt in myself, that the divine Virtue retired in me. I experienced what our LORD said, when the woman afflicted with the issue of blood touched him, and he instantly asked, "Who "touched me?" The apostles said, "Master, "the multitude throng thee, and press thee; and "sayest thou, Who touched me?" But he replied, "It is because virtue hath gone out of me." (Luke viii. 45, 46.) JESUS CHRIST had caused that healing virtue to flow through me, by means of his Word: But when that virtue met not with a correspondence in the subject, I felt it suspended in its source, which gave me some pain. I should be, as it were, displeased with those persons: But when there was no resistance, but a full acquiescence, this divine virtue had its full effect. One cannot conceive the delicacy of this healing virtue. Although it has so much power over things inanimate, yet the least thing in man either restrains it, or stops it entirely *.

2 THERE

^{*} The language of infidelity boldly pronounces, miracles are ceased; as if either the omnipotence of God, or his bemovolence to mankind were ceased. So formerly, when iniquity

to me that he very closely united us, saying "It is I who unite thee to myself, and am will-"ing that we be both one." Another time he bade me see Father La Combe, who then kept himself at some distance from me through infidelity; and with great goodness he brought him back again, willing to help me in the state of childhood, as I helped him in the state of death. He had a very great charity for me. Treating me as a real child, he often said to me, "When I am with you, I seem to myself as if "I was with a child." I was frequently reduced to extremity, and seemed on the point of death I had, as it were, its agonies. For several hours I only breathed a long time asunder. on a sudden I recovered. Death flattered me; for I had a great fondness for it; but it only appeared flying off. The father forbid me to rejoice at the prospect of death. I immediately discovered that it was an imperfection, and did it no more; remaining afterwards in the utmost indifference about it. There passed so many extraordinary things in this sickness, that it would be impossible for me to relate them. God incessantly wrought miracles to relieve me, and give me new strength when I was at extremity. In my pains they treated me wrong. The remedies they gave me augmented them; but I could not make myself uneasy about it. The sisters had much compassion for me; and all were concerned but myself.

Several times I saw in dreams Father La Mothe raising persecutions against me. Our Load let me know that this would be the case, and that Father La Combe would forsake me in the time of persecution. This I wrote to him, and it disquieted him greatly; because he thought

thought his heart was united to the will of God, and too desirous of serving me, to admit such desertion: And yet it has since been found quite true; though not with his will, but from necessity, having been himself persecuted the first. He was now to preach during Lent, and was so much followed, that people came five leagues, to pass several days there for the benefit of his ministry. I heard he was so sick that he was thought like to die, and prayed to the Lord to restore his health, and enable him to preach to the people, who were longing to hear him. My prayer was heard, and he soon recovered, and resumed his pious labours.

DURING my extraordinary sickness, the Lord gradually taught me that there was another manner of conversing among souls wholly his, than by speech. Thou madest me conceive, oh divine Word, that as thou art ever speaking and operating in a soul, though therein thou appearest in profound silence; so there was also a way of communication in thy creatures, in an ineffable silence. I learned then a language which before had been unknown to me. I gradually perceived, when Father La Combe entered, that I could speak no more; and that there was formed in my soul the same kind of silence towards him, as was formed in it in regard to Gop. I comprehended that Gop was willing to shew me that men might in this life learn the language of angels. I was gradually reduced to speak to him only in silence. It was then that we understood each other in Gop. after a manner unutterable and all divine. Our hearts spoke to each other, communicating a grace which no words can express. It was like a new country, both for him and for me, but so divine.

divine. that I cannot describe it. At first this was done in a manner so perceptible, that is to say, God penetrated us with himself in a manner so pure and so sweet, that we passed hours in this profound silence, always communicative, without being able to utter one word. It was in this that we learned, by our own experience, the operations of the heavenly word to reduce souls into unity with itself, and what purity one may arrive at in this life. It was given me to communicate this way to other good souls. but with this difference, that I did nothing but communicate to them the grace with which they were filled, while near me, in this sacred silence, which infused into them an extraordinary strength and grace; but I received nothing from them: Whereas with Father La Combe there was a flow and return of communication of grace, which he received from me, and I from him, in the greatest purity.

IT was in this that I comprehended the ineffable commerce of the most holy Trinity to all the blessed; and how God, who communicates himself to them, forms in them a flux and reflux of his own divine communications; that the saints of the like degree or hierarchy return to each other these pure and blissful emanations. and further shed them on the inferior hierarchies. and that all are reduced into their first principle. from whence they flow. I saw that we were created to partake in this life the unspeakable happiness of the commerce of the celestial regions, and that it requires us to be very pure to receive God thus uninterruptedly, and to leave him to flow back into himself in that same purity. We must indeed be very pure to receive and to communicate the divine Word, and afterwards

to diffuse it by a flux and reflux of communication upon the other souls which God gives us. This is what fixes us in the divine unity, in which we are one in him from whom all is derived.

I saw then this hierarchic order, and these reciprocal communications, among the saints and angels of the same rank; and how this efflux spreads over those of inferior orders, and that with such a plenitude, that they are all filled according to their degree. It is to render the soul capable of these communications, that it needs to be so thoroughly and radically purified; without which it would ever remain selfish, it would always save something alive: and from thence retard and wholly exclude them. Beside. its capacity needs to be extended, which being extremely contracted and bounded by sin, is not in a state, but by the force of fire, and the strokes of the hammer, to be capable of the eternal designs of God in its creation.

It was shewn to me how this hierarchic order was even in this life, and that there are souls who communicate to an infinite number of other souls, without knowing it, to whom the grace of their perfection reaches; that this hierarchy will be preserved through all eternity, and that those who naturally communicate to each other will be in the like degree. It was then that I learned the secret of spiritual fruitfulness and maternity; how the holy spirit renders souls fruitful in himself, and that there would be given to me in this way a numberless offspring as well known as unknown. All those who are my true children are drawn in their minds at once to continue in silence when with me; and

ve the like tendency to impart to them in nce what Gon gives me for them. In this nce I discover their wants and failings, and mmunicate to them in an abundant plenitude cording to their necessities. When once they ave tasted of this manner of communication, my other becomes burthensome to them. As or me, when I make use of speech or the pen with souls, I do it only on account of their weakness, and because either they are not pure enough for the interior communication . or because it is yet needful to use condescension, or for the regulation of outward affairs.

Our Lord gave me to experience the same communion with the saints in heaven, as with those on earth: This is the way to be truly united to the saints in God. I felt these communications very inward and very powerful, especially to those with whom one has most of the relation of grace, and to whom one is to be At first this was more sensible, because our Lord was graciously pleased to instruct me by my experience. It is most united in heaven. the way which he has always used toward me. He has enlightened me, not by illustrations, and conclusions resulting from them; but in making me experience the things themselves, he gave me the illumination thereon, and thus a clear sight and sense of what I had experienced. comprehended also the maternity of the Holy Virgin, and after that manner we partake of it; and how the word of Jesus Christ is found very signally realized, when he says,

(Matt. xii. 50.)

(Matt. xii. 50.) of my Father which is in heaven, the same " is my brother, and sister, and mother." They are truly made mothers, producing him in other souls.

IT was in this ineffable silence, that I comprehended the manner in which JESUS CHRIST communicated himself to his most familiar friends; and the communication of St. John. when leaning on his Lord's bosom at the supper of the passover. It was not the first time that he had seated himself that way; and it was because he was most proper to receive these communications, being the disciple of love. It was in that great banquet that JESUS CHRIST, as the WORD, flowed into JOHN, and discovered to him his profound mysteries, even how the eternal word operates. For the speech of this word in silence is the most noble and sublime of all operations. It was by this that he learned the difference between being born of the flesh, or of the will of man, and being born of GoD. (JOHN i. 13.) The operations of the flesh are those of carnal men; those of the will of man are such as are virtuous, being done from the good disposition of the man: But those which I am speaking of are of the will of Gop, wherein man has no share, except the submission or consent which he gives thereto; which was the case of MARY, who said, "Behold the handmaid " of the LORD, be it unto me according to thy "word." She gave her consent, not only for herself, for the incarnation of the word in her, but for all who are regenerated in JESUS CHRIST, that the word should be communicated to them : that, as Eve's consent to the Tempter had caused death to enter into all her children, so MARY's. consent to God might communicate the life of the word to all that are born of Gop.

It is for this that Jesus Christ is the way, the truth, and the life; that he comes to enlighten every man that cometh into the world: He

CHAP. XIV.

IN this long malady the love of God, and of him alone, made up my whole occupation, I seemed so entirely lost in him, as to have no sight of myself at all. It seemed as if my heart never came out of that divine ocean, having been drawn into it through deep humiliations. Oh loss which is the consummation of happiness, though operated through crosses and through deaths!

Jesus, as an infant, was then all living in me; and I lived no more. I was then taught, oh my Love, that thy state of infancy should not be the only one which I must bear. words were imprinted in me, as a real state into which I must enter, (Matt. viii. 20.) "The "foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have "nests, but the Son of man hath not where to "lay his head." This I have since experienced in all its extent, having no sure abode, no refuge among my friends, who were ashamed of me, and openly renounced me, when universally decried; nor among my relations, most of whom declared themselves my adversaries, and were my greatest persecutors; while others looked on me with contempt and indignation. My state began to be like that of Job. I might say with **DAVID**, (Psal. xix. 7, 8.—xxii. 6.—xxxi. 11.) "For thy sake I have borne reproach; shame " hath covered my face; I am become a stranger "to my brethren, and an alien unto my mother's "children: A reproach to men, and despised " of the people."

ONE night when I was awake, Chaist shewed

me to myself, under the figure of the woman in the Revelations, (Rev. 12.) for as the brazen serpent represented Christ, tho' not really inused, so this figure shadowed out my state. The moon was under her feet, a crown of thorns upon her head, and surrounded with the sun, being with child, cried in the pange of child-He showed hereby that my soul was above the vicissitudes and inconstancy of events: that I was covered and penetrated with the Sun of Righteousness; that the twelve stars were the cruits of this state, and the gifts of God, as a crown on my head; that I was big with a fruit, which was the spirit which God would have me communicate to all my children; that the devil was the frightful dragon who would strive to deyour that fruit, and to make horrible ravages over all the earth round about me; but that Gop would preserve this fruit, that it should not be lost; (So I trust, in spite of the storm, that all I have had to say or write will be preserved) that the devil in his rage, at not succeeding in his design against the fruit, would fall the more thereely on myself, and would raise a flood against me to swallow me up; that this flood would be calumny, which would rush to carry me down with rapidity; but that the earth would open itself to receive this flood; that is to say, that this calumny would gradually fall to the ground, and there die away.

the showed me all the world in a rage against without any one daring to appear for me; without any one daring to me vast numbers, which I should bring forth by a common left it to him to do with me what-

interest to be placed entirely in his divine Will. He gave me to see how the devil was going to stir up an outrageous persecution against prayer, that it should prove the source of the same prayer, or rather the means which God would make use of to establish it. He gave me to see farther how he would guide me into the wilderness, where he would cause me to be nourished for a time, and times, and half a time. The wings, which were to bear me thither, were the resignation of my whole self to his holy will, and the love of the same will. I think I am at present in that wilderness, separated from the whole world in my imprisonment; and I see already accomplished in part what was then shown me. Can I ever express the mercies which my God has bestowed on me? No; they must ever remain in himself, being of a nature not to be described, by reason of their purity, and immensity.

In my sickness I was often in all appearance at the point of death. I fell into convulsions from violent pains in my bowels, which lasted a long time with violence. Father La Combe administred the sacrament to me, the Prioress of the Ursulines having desired him to do it as their priest was then not at home. I was well satisfied to die, as was he also in the expectation of my departure. For being united in God after a manner so pure, and so spiritual, death could not separate us, but on the contrary would have more closely united us. Father La Combe, who was on his knees at my bed-side, remarking the change of my countenance, and how my eyes faded, seemed ready to give me up as dying; when God inspired him to lift up his hands, and with a strong voice, which was heard of those who were in my chamber, (at that time almost full,) to command Death to relinquish. Instantly it seemed to be stopped: And thus God was pleased wonderfully to raise me up again; yet for a long time I continued extremely weak, during all which our Lord still gave me new testimonies of his love. How many times was he pleased to make use of his servant to restore me to life, when I was almost on the very point of expiring! As they saw that my sickness and pains did not end, they judged that the air of the lake on which the convent was situated, was very prejudicial to my constitution. They concluded that it would be necessary for me to remove.

During my sad indisposition, our Lorp put it into the heart of Father La Combe to establish an hospital in this place for the poor people seized with maladies, and to institute also a committee or congregation of ladies of the charity, to furnish such as could not leave their families, to go to the hospital, with the means of subsistence during their illness, after the manner of France, there not having been yet any institution of this kind in that country. Willingly did I enter into it; and without any other fund than Providence, and some useless chambers which the gentlemen of the town gave us, we began it. We dedicated it to the holy Child JESUS, and he was pleased to give the first beds to it from the earnest-pence of my pension, which belong to him. He gave such a blessing thereto, that several other persons joined us in this charity. In a short time there were near twelve beds in it, and three persons of great piety gave themselves to this hospital to serve it, who, without any salary, consecrated

crated themselves to the service of the poor patients. I supplied them with ointments and medicines, which were freely given to such of the poor people of the town as had need of them. These good ladies were so hearty in the cause, that, through their charity, and the care of the young women, this hospital was very well maintained and served. These ladies joined together also in providing for the sick, who could not go to the hospital: And I gave them some little regulations such as I had observed when in France, which they continued to keep up with tenderness and love.

ALL these little things, which cost but little, and which owed all their success to the blessing which God gave them, drew upon us new per-The Bishop of Geneva was offended secutions. with me more than ever, especially in seeing that these small matters rendered me beloved. He said, "I won over every body." He openly declared, "that he could not bear me in his "diocese," though I had done therein nothing but good, or rather God by me. He extended the persecution to those good religious women who had been my assistants. The Prioress in particular had her own share to bear, though it did not last long: For as I was obliged, on account of the air, to remove, after having been there about two years and a half, they were then more in peace and quietness. On another account my sister was very weary of this house: And as the season for the waters approached, they took occasion from thence to send her away, with the maid which I brought with me, who had molested me exceedingly in my late illness. I only kept her whom Providence had sent me by means of my sister: And I have ever thought

thought that God had ordered my sister's journey hither, only to bring her to me, as one chosen of him and proper for the state which it was his pleasure to cause me to bear.

WHILE I was yet indisposed, with the Ursulines, the Bishop of Verceil, earnestly requested the father-general of the Barnabites, to seek among the Religious a man of merit, piety and learning, in whom he might place a confidence. and who might serve him for a prebend and a counsellor. At first he cast his eyes on Father La Combe; yet before he absolutely engaged him with the said bishop, he wrote to him, to know, "whether he had any objection thereto," Father La Combe replied, "that he had no other "will but that of obeying him, and that he "might command him herein as he should think "best in the case." He gave me an account of this, and that we were going to be entirely separated. I was glad to find that our Lord would employ him, under a Bishop who knew him, and would be likely to do him justice. Yet it was some time before he went, matters not being all fixed.

CHAP. XV.

T THEN went off from the Ursulines, and they sought for a house for me at a distance from the Lake. There was but one to be found empty, which had the look of the greatest poverty. It had no chimney but in the kitchen through which one was obliged to pass to go to the chamber. I took my daughter with me, and gave up the largest chamber for her and the maid who was to take care of her. I was lodged in a little hole, on straw, to which I went up by a ladder. As we had no other furniture than our beds, which were quite plain and homely, I bought some straw chairs and bosses with Dutch earthen and wooden ware. Never did I enjoy a greater content than in this little hole, which appeared so very conformable to the state of littleness of Jesus Christ: I fancied every thing better on wood than on plate. I laid in all my provisions, hoping to stay there a long time, but the Devil did not leave me long in such sweet peace. It would be difficult for me to tell the persecutions which were stirred up against me. They threw stones in and at my windows, which fell at my feet. I had got my little garden put in order. came in the night, tore it all up, broke down the arbour, and overturned every thing in it, as if it had been ravaged by soldiers. They came to abuse me at the door all night long, making such a racket as if they were going to break it open. These persons have since told who put them on such work. Though from time to time I continued my charities at Ger, I was not the less persecuted for it. They offered

offered one person a * warrant to compel Father La Combe to stay at Tonon, thinking he would otherwise be a support to me in the persecution, but we prevented it. I knew not then the designs of God, and that he would soon draw me from that poor solitary place, in which I had enjoyed a sweet and solid satisfaction, notwithstanding the abuses from without. I thought myself happier here than any Sovereign on earth. It was for me like a nest and a place of repose: And Christ was willing that I should be like him. The Devil, as I have said, irritated my persecutors. They sent to desire me to go out of the diocese. All the good which the Lord had caused me to do in it was condemned, more than the greatest crimes. Those crimes they tolerated, but me they could not endure. this while I never had any uneasiness or repentance for my having left all, not that I was assured of having done the will of God therein: Such an assurance would have been too much for me. But I could neither see nor regard any thing, receiving every thing alike from the hand of my God, who directed and disposed these crosses for me either in justice or in mercy.

The Marchioness of *Prunai*, sister of the chief secretary of state to his Royal Highness the Duke of Savoy, and his prime minister, had sent an express from *Turin*, in the time of my illness, to invite me to come to reside with her; and to let me know that, "being so persecuted "as I was in this diocese, I should find an asy-"lum with her; that during that time things "might grow better; that when they should

^{*} Lettre de Cachet.

"be well disposed she would return with me, "and join me with a friend of mine from Paris, "who was willing also to come to labour there, "according to the will of Gop." I was not at that time in a condition to execute what she desired of me, and expected to continue with the Ursulines till things should change. She then wrote to me about it no more. This lady is one of extraordinary piety, who had quitted the splendour and noise of the court for the more silent satisfaction of a retired life, and to give herself up to God. With an eminent share of natural advantages, she has continued a widow twenty-two years; and has refused every offer of marriage, to consecrate herself to our Lord entirely and without any reserve. When she knew that I had been obliged to leave the Ursuknes, yet without knowing any thing of the manner in which I had been treated, she procured a letter to oblige Father La Combe to go to pass some weeks at Turin, for her own benefit, and to bring me with him thither, where I should find a refuge. All this she did unknown to us; and, as she has told us since, a superior force moved her to do it, without knowing the cause thereof. If she had deliberately reflected on it, being such a prudent lady, she probably would not have done it: For the persecutions, which the Bishop of Geneva procured us in that place, cost her more than a little of humiliations. Our LORD permitted him to pursue me, after a surprizing manner, into all the places I have been in, without giving me any relaxation, though I never did him any harm; but on the contrary would have lain down my life for the good of his diocese.

As this fell out without any design on our part,

mu reaction, believed it must be mu react to draw us out of the second a we laboured under, as therefore concluded the should conduct me to a sould go from thence to

· · vith me a religious man :::::: Theology for fourteen " so things with the more ve 134v from our enemics all I also took with me a mucht out of France, and ...: taylor's trade. They took ... a litter for my daughter, ... sad myself: But all precau-.... en it pleases God to permit Our adversaries imme-. s · Paris. A hundred ridicu-..... sulated about this journey: at a second on it, things invented at as any in the world could De La Mothe who was so ... 12 11 this stuff. Had he believed we we cught out of charity to have much more, being so very "I was gone all alone with strolling about the country, some to province," with many such weak and wicked as they were incohadly put together. We suffered all without vindicating ourselves, ong any complaint: And if things be and impartially considered, could I do ster in the condition I was in? Was it not

not both honourable and of real advantage for me to be with a lady of such quality and merit? Was it not sufficient to cut off the course of malediction? Do disorderly persons choose houses of that sort? But passion has no eyes, and calumny is a torrent which drowns all reason.

SCARCE were we arrived at Turin, but the Bishop of Geneva wrote against us. As he could pursue us no other way, he did it by his letters. Father La Combe repaired to Verceil, and I staid at Turin, with the Marchioness of Prunai. But what crosses was I assaulted with in my own family, from the Bishop of Geneva, from the Barnabites, and from a vast number of persons besides! My eldest son came to find me out, on the death of my mother-in-law, which was an augmentation of my troubles; but after we had heard all his accounts of things, and how they had made sales of all the moveables, chosen Guardians, and settled every article, without consulting me at all, I seemed to be there entirely useless. It was judged not proper for me to return, considering the rigour of the season.

The Marchioness of Prunai, who had been so warmly desirous of my company, seeing my great crosses and reproaches, looked coldly upon me. My child-like simplicity, which was the state wherein at that time God kept me, passed with her for stupidity, though in that condition he inspired me to utter oracles; for when the question was to help any one, or about any thing which God required of me, he gave me, with the weakness of a child, which appeared in pure candour, the evident tokens of divine strength.

strength. Her heart was quite shut up to me all the time I was there. Our Lord however made me foretel all that should fall out. and which since that time has actually been fulfilled. as well to herself as to her daughter, and to the virtuous Ecclesiastic, who lived at her house. She did not fail, at last, to conceive more friendship for me, seeing then that CHRIST was in me. It was the force of self-love, and fear of reproach, which had closed up her heart. Moreover she thought her state more advanced than in reality it was, by reason of her being without probations; but she soon saw by experience that I had told her the truth. She was obliged for family reasons to leave Turin, and go to live on her own estate. She solicited me to go with her; but the education of my daughter did not. permit my compliance. To stay at Turin without her seemed improper, because, having lived very retired in this place, I made no acquaintance in it. I knew not which way to turn. The Bishop of Verceil, where Father La Combe was, most obligingly wrote to me, earnestly entreating me to come thither, promising me his protection, and assuring me of his esteem. adding, "that he should look upon me as his. "own sister; that he wished extremely to have "me there." It was his own sister, a religious of the visitation of Turin, one of my particular friends, who had wrote to him about me, as had also a French gentleman, an acquaintance of his. But a point of honour kept me from it. would not have it said that I had gone after Father La Combe, and that I had come to Turin, only for the purpose of going to Verceil. had also his reputation to preserve, which was the cause that he could not agree to my going thither, however importunate the Bishop was for

for it. Had we believed it to be the will of God, we should both of us have passed over these considerations. God kept us both in so great a dependance on his orders, that he did not let us foreknow them; but the divine moment of his Providence determined every thing. This proved of very great service to Father La Combe, who had long walked in assurances, to die to them and to himself; for God by an effect of his goodness, that he might thus die without any reserve, took them all away from him.

During the whole time of my residence at Turin, our Lord conferred on me very great favours. I found myself every day more transformed into him, and had continually more knowledge of the state of souls, without ever being mistaken or deceived therein, though some were willing to persuade me to think the contrary. I had used my utmost endeavours to give myself other thoughts, which has cost me not a little. For when I told, or wrote to Father La Combe about the state of some souls. which appeared to him more perfect and advanced than the knowledge given to me of them. he attributed it to pride; he was very angry with me, and prejudiced against my state. had no uneasiness on account of his esteeming me the less, for I was not in a condition to reflect whether he esteemed me or not. He could not reconcile (God so permitting it, to take from him every support) an obedience to a miracle in most things, with so extraordinary a firmness, which in certain cases he looked on as criminal. He admitted a distrust of my grace: for he was not yet sufficiently confirmed in his way, nor did he duly comprehend, that it did

nut in my vise desend on me, to be either one way in miner. and that if I had any such power, I struck that suited myself to what he said, to man nused the images which that caused me; in it was visual have estably dissembled my The second section of the I would do neither. Were El - remai im a l'une in such a manner conscreener, much emple not forbear telling him the things tust is for Liver directed me to tell them - I'm. In this le has given me an invio-Role rue of the test and No crosses or value in the ever make me fall a moment therein. These mings them which excessed to him to be are some mounter of a concentral opinion, set non to carante against me. And though he out not meny sites a full in the contrary tried er anices a com me ver hav far distant wer or he word true me I extend not be ignorant in a my spine with a unit that more or less. is the mountain was summer or weaker; and AN ANY IN CHARGE IT MARKS INT PAIR OCCAwere there were in also ca his side. severement the last. He has this me and wrote as we make these rest "When I stand well " with June I mu I me well with von: When The supervise vice him. I then said invielf the second pure me. Thus he saw clearly The later of the received that may his boson, it bluowed it as one or unit ground it east a second sources to their min and but it is enion.

The residence of the state of t

"much edified by her; that he was far from "finding the like in me; that I operated nothing "but death upon his soul." At first I rejoiced at his having met with such a holy soul, as it ever gives me the highest joy to see my God glorified. As I was returning, the LORD shewed me clearly the state of that soul, as only a beginning of devotion mixt with affection and a little silence. filled with a new sensation. This and more, as it was set before me, I was obliged to write to him upon it. On his first reading of my letter he discovered the stamp of truth in it; but soon after, letting in again his old reflections, he viewed all I wrote in the light of pride; for he still had in his mind the ordinary rules of humility conceived and comprized after our manner. As to me, I let myself be led as a child, who says and does, without distinction, whatever it is made to say and do. I left myself to be led wheresoever my heavenly Father pleased, high or low; all was alike good to me.

HE wrote to me, that, at his first reading of my letter, thereappeared in it something of truth, but that on reading it over again, he found it to be full of pride, and of a preference of my own discernment to that of others. I knew the moment when he opened my letter, and entered into the truth of it. When the maid, by whom I sent it, who was that maid which our LORD had brought me, was returned, I told her this; and she assured me that it was the very time when he had read my letter. Sometime after he was more enlightened hereupon, and in regard to the state I was in. He then said to me, "Continue to believe as you have done; I "encourage and exhort you to do it." Upon which I began to respire, to recover new life and an enlargement of soul. "Let nobody (said I to myself as I was returning) speak to "me any more of humility. The ideas which "people generally have of virtues are not for "me. There is nothing else for me but that "one thing, viz. ever singly to obey my God." Some time after he sufficiently discovered, by that person's manner of acting, that she was very far from what he had thought of her. I give this only as one instance. I might give many others nearly like it; but this may suffice.

CHAP. XVI.

NE night in a dream our Lord shewed me, that he would also purify the maid whom he had given me, and make her truly enter into death to herself. I then freely resolved to suffer for her, as I did for Father La Combe. resisted God much more than he, and was much more under the power of self-love, she had more to be purified from. For this maid I have borne much, during three whole years. Our Lord caused me incessantly to do miracles on her account. It seemed as if he gave me an absolute power over both her body and soul. How much soever she was indisposed, as soon as I said to her, "Be healed," she was so: And for her pain, I bore the most of it. It seems as if our LORD had given me some share of experience for her, of what he himself had suffered for men. Surely a small part thereof would have consumed ten thousand worlds. He shewed me, in a dream, her resistances, under the figure

of sundry animals, coming out of her body, whose outsides appeared pure, bright and transparent as glass, but all unclean within. Hereby I knew that she had passed through the first purification, or cleansing of the outside, for which reason she had passed in the world for a saint, but far from being inwardly purified, While on that account I suffered, I saw those animals destroy one another, till there remained only one, which devoured all the rest; vet itself appeared to have all the iniquity of the others in What I could not tolerate in her was her regard for herself. I saw clearly that the devil cannot hurt us, but so far as we retain some fondness for this corrupt self. This sight was from God, who gave me the discerning of spirits, which would ever accept what was from him, or reject what was not; and that not from any common methods of judging, not from any outward information, but by an inward principle which is his gift alone.

THAT this point be not mistaken, it is needful to mention here that souls which are vet in themselves, whatever degree of light and ardour they have attained, are unqualified for it. They often think they have this discernment, when it is nothing else but sympathy or antipathy of nature. Our Lord had destroyed in me every sort of natural antipathy. The soul must be very pure, and depending on God alone, that all these things may be experienced in him. In proportion as this maid became inwardly purified my pain abated, till the Lord let me know her state was going to be changed, which soon happily ensued. In comparison of inward pains for souls, outward persecutions, though ever so violent, scarce gave me any. The Bishop of Geneva

"rage and resolution enough to embark on this sea, and to suffer shipwreck there." The boy returned and told him, "that he did not yet see any one escaped from the shipwreck." Thereupon I awaked, much affected with this dream. The sweet impression it left on my spirit continued many days.

My interior state grew still more firm, and my heart so pure that not any imagination entered it, but such as it pleased the LORD to raise. Mine was such a state as is beyond all the power of expression to describe, every motion of the creature so entirely lost, that though outwardly it be free, inwardly it is not, even for the least thing in the world; all its movements and actions being now in Gop, and under the dominion of his will, in entire union with him, the soul living in and of God, as the body lives in and of the air it breathes. This state is known of God only. Such souls are, as to their exterior, only common, though precious in the sight of God. Though they are the objects of his delight, they are often the butt of the rage and scorn of the creatures.

CHAP. XVII.

IT pleased God here to make use of me to the conversion of two or three Ecclesiastics. But I had much to suffer from their repugnances and many infidelities—one of whom had villified me greatly—and even after his conversion turned aside

aside into his old ways; but God at length graciously restored him.

Before his last return I saw (in a dream) a great number of very beautiful birds, which every one was pursuing with great emulation and eagerness to catch. I beheld them all without taking part therein, and without wishing to catch any of them. I was not a little surprized, to see that they all came to offer themselves to me, without my using any effort to take them. Among them there was one of an extraordinary beauty, which far surpassed all the others. Every body was eager to get this: But it escaped them all, and me too as well as the rest: but afterwards it returned to offer itself to me, when I no longer expected it. There was one of the others which after having come in like manner, fluttered for a long time, one while offering itself, another while retiring, but at length gave itself up intirely. This last appeared to me to be the religious man I have been just speaking of. Others fled quite away. But the beautiful bird, which had not any rival,* is not unknown to me, though he has not come vet. Be it either before or after my death, I am assured the time will come when he will wholly give himself up to Goo.

As I was with the Marchioness of Prunai, undetermined whether I should place my daughter at the Visitation of Turin, to go thither with her, or take some other course; I was exceedingly surprized, at a time I least expected it to see Father La Combe arrive from Verceil, and tell me, "I must return to Paris without

^{*} Perhaps Feneron, Archbishop of Cambray.

any delay." It was in the evening, and he said, "I must set off next morning. fess this sudden news startled me. It was for me a double sacrifice, to return to a place where they had cried me down so much; and towards a family which held me in contempt, and who had represented my journey (caused by pure necessity) as a voluntary course, pursued through human attachments. Behold me then disposed to go off, without offering a single word in reply, with my daughter and my chambermaid, without any body to guide and attend us; for Father La Combe was resolved not to accompany me, not so much as in passing the mountains; because the Bishop of Geneva had writ on all sides that I was gone to Turin, to run after him: But the father provincial, who was a man of quality, and well acquainted with the virtue of Father La Combe, told him, "that it was "improper and unsafe to venture on these "mountains, without some persons of my ac-" quaintance; and the more as I had my little. "daughter with me; and that he therefore " ordered him to accompany me." Father La Combe confessed to me that he had some reluctance to do it, and that only obedience, and the danger to which I should have been exposed, made him surmount it. He was only to accompany me to Grenoble, and from thence to return to Turin. I went off then, designing for Paris, there to suffer whatever crosses and trials it should please God to inflict.

WHAT made me pass by Grenoble was the desire I had to spend two or three days with a lady, an eminent servant of God, and one of my triends. When I was there Father La Combe and that lady spoke to me not to go any farther;

that God would glorify himself in me and by me in that place. He returned to Verceil, and I left myself to be conducted as a child by Providence. This lady took me to the house of a good widow, there not being accommodations at the inn; and as I was ordered to stop at Grenoble, at her house I resided. I placed my daughter in a convent, and resolved to employ all this time in resigning myself to be possessed in solitude by Him who is the absolute Sovereign of my soul. I made not any visit in this place; no more had I in any of the others where I had so journed. But I was greatly surprized when, a few days after my arrival, there came to see me several persons who made profession of a singular devotion to Gon. ceived immediately a gift which he had given me, both of discerning spirits and of administering to each that which suited their states. I felt myself invested, all on a sudden, with the apostolic state, and discerned the conditions of the souls of such persons as spoke to me, and that with so much facility, that they were surprized at it, and said one to another, "that I "gave every one of them the very thing they "had stood in need of." It was thou, oh my God, who didst all these things; some of them sent others to me. It came to such an excess. that, generally from six in the morning to eight in the evening, I was taken up in speaking of People flocked on all sides, far and near, friars, priests, men of the world, maids, wives, widows, all came one after another; and God supplied me with what was pertinent and satisfactory to them all, after a wonderful manner, without any share of my study or meditation Nothing was hid from me of their interior state, and of what passed within them.

Here, oh my God, thou made an infinite number of conquests known to thyself only. were instantly furnished with a wonderful facility of prayer. God conferred on them his grace plentifully, and wrought marvellous changes in The most advanced of these souls found. when with me, in silence, a grace communicated to them which they could neither comprehend, nor cease to admire. The others found an unction in my words, and that they operated in them what I said to them. They said, "they "had never experienced any thing like it." Friars of different orders, and priests of merit, came to see me, to whom our Lord granted very great favours, as indeed he did to all, without exception, who came in sincerity.

ONE thing was surprizing, which was, that I had not a syllable to say to such as came only to watch my words, and to criticise on them. Even when I thought to try to speak to them, I felt that I could not, and that God would not have me do it. Some of them in return said, "The "people are fools to go to see that lady. She "cannot speak." Others of them treated me as if I were only a stupid simpleton. After they left me there came one and said, "I could not "get hither soon enough to apprize you not to "speak to those persons; they come from such "and such, to try what they can catch from "you to your disadvantage." I answered them, "Our LORD has prevented your charity; for I "was not able to say one word to them."

I FELT that what I spoke flowed from the fountain, and that I was only the instrument of him who made me speak. Amidst this general applause, our Lord made me comprehend what the apostolic state was, with which he had honoured

noured me; that to give one's self up to the help of souls, in the purity of his Spirit, was to expose one's self to the most cruel persecutions. These very words were imprinted on my heart: "To resign ourselves to serve our neighbour is "to sacrifice ourselves to a gibbet. "now proclaim, Blessed is he who cometh in the "Name of the LORD, will soon cry out, Take "away, crucify." • One of my friends speaking of the general esteem the people had for me, I said to her. "Observe what I now tell you, that "you will hear curses out of the same mouths "which at present pronounce blessings." Our LORD made me comprehend that I must be conformable to him in all his states; and that, if he had continued in a private life with his parents. he never had been crucified; that, when he would resign any of his servants to crucifixion. he employed such in the ministry and service of their neighbours. It is certain that all the souls employed herein by apostolic destination from God, and who are truly in the apostolic state, are to suffer extremely. I speak not of those who put themselves into it, who, not being called of God in a singular manner, and having nothing of the grace of the apostleship, have none of its crosses; but of those only who surrender themselves to God without any reserve, and who are willing with their whole hearts to be exposed. for his sake, to sufferings without any mitiga-They must assuredly become a spectacle. to God, to angels, and to men; to God, of glory, by their conformity to Jesus Christ; to angels, of joy; and to men, of cruelty and ignominy.

KIII.

number of good souls. vrought much by me. v as plants to cultivate. a. and not that near connecver them, which I had . then that I comprehended revend what I had done bete latter kind were given me an some were faithful. I knew . . and they were closely united a: : ... Others were unfaithful: the some would never return active and they were taken from pring aside, were recovered. se me much distress and inward ... want of courage to die to themwe up the point; and revolted and regarding they had been favoured

amongst such multitudes as fola carth, had few true children. Those that to his Father, "Those that and to his Father, "Those that and thave kept, and none of them we an of perdition," shewing hereany beside of his apostles, wough they sometimes made false

deferent numbers of friars who there was one order which discotice effects of grace more than any that very order had before this, where Father La Combe was in mission, been actuated with a false false zeal, and violent in persecuting all the good souls which had sincerely dedicated themselves to God, plaguing them after such a manner as can scarce be conceived, burning all their books which treated of silence and inward prayer. refusing absolution to such as were in the practice of it, driving into consternation, and almost into despair, such as had formerly led wicked lives, but were now reformed, and preserved in grace by means of prayer, becoming spotless and blameless in their conduct. These friars had proceeded to such an excess of wild zeal as to raise a sedition in that town, in which a father of the oratory, a person of distinction and merit, received strokes with a stick in the open street. because he prayed extempore in the evenings, and on Sundays made a short fervent prayer, which insensibly habituated these good souls to the use and practice of the like.

I NEVER in all my life had so much consolation as to see in this little town so many pious souls, who with a heavenly emulation gave up their whole hearts to God. There were girls of twelve or thirteen years of age, who industriously followed their work almost all the day long, in silence, and in their employments enjoyed a communion with God, having acquired a fixed habit herein. As these girls were poor they placed themselves two and two together, and such as could do it read to the others who could not. One saw there the innocence of the primitive christians revived. There was in that town a poor laundress who had five children, and a husband paralytic, lame in the right arm, and yet worse distempered in mind than in body. He had little strength left for any thing else. than to beat her: Yet this poor woman bore

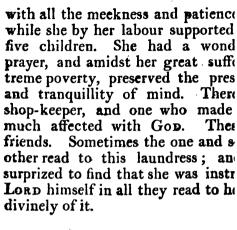
A Months

inim and his lerful gift of lering and extering and extering and extering and extering and extering and locks, very like the locks, very lering the locks, were lering sometimes the lering instructed by the lead to her, and spoke

inis woman, and threat-... inot leave off prayer, r churchmen to pray, sold to practise it. who instructed her, for secotherself) "that Christ ... to pray, and that he had you I say unto all. Mark wat specifying either priests . . :::out prayer she could not · sand poverty; that formerly . thout it, and then was very see she had been in the exand loved God with all her ... : leave off prayer was to rewhich she could not do." man they might take twenty persons constraints of prayer, and twenty of the practice of it: Then, warm yourselves of the lives of both will see if ye have any reason to woman, one would think save fully convinced them; but (instead

of that) they only irritated them the more. They assured her "she should have no absolu-"tion till she promised them to desist from "prayer." She said, "It depended not on her, "and that CHRIST is master of what he com-"municates to his creatures, and of doing with "it what he pleases." They refused her absolution; and after railing at a good taylor, who served God with his whole heart, they ordered all the books without exception, which treated on prayer to be brought to them, and burned them with their own hands in the public square. They were hugely elated with their performance: But all the town presently arose in an uproar, on account of the late insolent and intolerable usage given to the father of the oratory. The principal men went to the Bishop of Geneva, and complained to him of the scandals of these new missionaries, so different from the others. Speaking of Father La Combe, who had been there before them on his mission, they said, "these seemed as if they were sent to destroy "all the good he had done." The Bishop was forced to come himself to that town, and there to mount the pulpit, protesting he had no share in it, and that these fathers had pushed their zeal too far. The friars, on the other side declared, they had done all they did, pursuant to the orders given them.

THERE were also at Tonon young women who had retired together, being poor villagers, the better to earn their livelihood and to serve God. One of them read from time to time, while the others were at work, and not one went out without asking leave of the eldest. They wove ribbons, or spun, and the strong supporting the weak. They separated these poor girls, and others



Those friars sent for this woma ened her much if she did not lea telling her it was only for churc and that she was very bold to p replied, (or rather he who ins' she was very ignorant of hersel "had commanded all to pray " said, What I say unto you I "xiii, 33. 37. without spec " or friars; that without pr " support her crosses and po-"she had lived without it. "wicked: that since she " ercise of it, she had lov "soul; so that to leav " nounce her salvation, gross, She added "that they n . hich i Loodnes " who had never pract , to his g "those who were in " said she, inform yo "sorts, and ye will me chil very parti "cry out against these, from such a might have fully contact the case No Non the case

and purify them, they never enter into the pure divinity in this life. As this purification is not effected but by pain, and the destruction of all the selfish wisdom and desires, this is the cause, why many pious souls, highly applauded of men. have still need of farther purification. who have not come so far as to be quite fixed in the pure love of God, are ever liable to change, and to transgress in some points in the will, or natural inclination, till they be dead to themselves, and passed into God, who renders the will in this state immutable; all that nature, that leaven which may be ever making it rise again, which is self-love in its many forms, some of them seeming both lawful and commendable in the sight of men, being thoroughly purged away, which God is very willing to do for us in this life: But this is not effected but by severe and extreme pains to us, and the loss of every support of artful corrupt self. Hence the souls truly changed into his image, are more rare than I can set forth or express.

To return to my subject, I experienced that this young woman stuck to me still by a certain secret tie, as a sinner does to his Gop, from whence he may still be received in him, when the cause of the rejection ceases. God incessantly solicits this will to cease to be rebellious. and spares nothing on his side for this good end. The will is free, yet grace follows it still. soon as the will ceases to rebel, it finds grace at the door, ready to introduce its unspeakable benefits. Oh the goodness of God and baseness of the sinner, each of them amazing when clearly seen! I felt, I say, how this young woman and many other souls stuck to mine by a tie of filiation; but I found I could no more communicate

nicate grace to her as I had done, by reason of her want of simplicity in the will, and that it was impossible for the divine efflux to enter, till her dissimulation were destroyed, though I loved her much; but that will in her occasioned the rejection, which could not end but by its change. How wonderful is God to give to poor creatures the experimental knowledge of his deep and mysterious secrets! For what I have experienced in respect of her I have done in regard to sundry But I have given her case as one example. Father La Combe thought her virtuous; When I told him a little of this fault of her's, he accused me of rash judgment, which indeed was far from me; but he afterwards came to see for himself enough of her craft and artifice.

Before I arrived at Grenoble, the lady, my friend there, saw in a dream that our Lord gave me an infinite number of children all uniformly clad, bearing on their habits the marks of candour and innocence. She thought I was coming to take care of the children of the hospital. But as soon as she told me it, I discerned that it was not that which the dream meant; but that our Lord would give me, by a spiritual fruitfulness, a great number of children; that they would not be my true children but in simplicity, candour and innocence. So great an aversion I have to artifice and disguise.

CHAP. XX.

THE good brother I have spoken of (Chap. xviii.) found himself disposed to lay open his heart to me like a child. Our LORD gave him through me all that was necessary for him; for though disposed to the spiritual life, yet for want of courage and fidelity he had not duly advanced in it. Hereupon he said unto me, "You are my "true mother." From that time God has granted him many favours through this poor nothing creature. I felt he was one of my sons, one of the most faithful and closely united. Every time he came to see me, he became more encouraged and fortified to die thoroughly to himself, sensibly assured of the power of God in me, which he felt, in his dependant state. Our Lord instructed him in silence, and prepared him to receive his grace, without the mediation of words, which carried on its operation in him, in proportion as he died more to himself. Christ has declared, "Where two " or three are gathered together in my name "there am I in the midst of them." With the greatest certainty, through his blessed operations, is this experienced. As this brother was already advanced in the spiritual life, and had only stopped and been retarded in it, he was soon recovered hereby.

In proportion as his soul advanced sufficiently for continuing in silence before God, and as the Word operated on him in silence, being vivid and fruitful, and not a state of indolence, as some ignorantly imagine, he thereby grew in grace. Oh, immediate, ineffable Word! who tellest us every thing without articulating any thing!

thing! He who has never experienced thee knows nothing .- It was then given to him to communicate with me in silence the operations of that divine Word, the fulness thereof in him became more abundant, like a sluice lifted up, which discharges itself with profusion, and that with so much force and grace in souls well disposed, that the full river does not flow with more impetuosity. But alas! how few souls are pure enough for this enjoyment passing in them after such a manner! This fulness which he received still emptied him more of himself, putting him in a state of deeper silence before God, and a greater detachment from every thing else. still disposed him more both for God and for me.

OH my God, how well I comprehended in this silence that in souls which are wholly thine thy grace flows like a river! This is that well of water springing up into everlasting life; the great mystery which CHRIST spoke of, and revealed to the Samaritan woman. It springs up in such abundance that there is a sufficiency in it for filling an infinite number of souls, each according to its degree, without ceasing to be fall. Oh admirable hierarchy, which begins in this life, to continue through all eternity! Yes, there is a hierarchy among saints on earth, even as among angels in heaven. And those who have served as conduits to water their souls, shall continue such in eternity. The water of life will flow from the sacred source into the souls of all those who have lived by grace, more or less, as they are fitted, extended or dilated to receive of its abundance. And it requires more of largeness and extent both to receive and to communicate abundantly to others. who

who are dead in sin receive nothing of this plenitude of life. Through the want of this they may properly besaid to be dead; all the passages, by which life might flow into them, being closed up by sin. But souls living in the pure love of God all receive from this fulness more or less, according as they are disposed or fitted for it by the purity and receptivity of the soul. But all who are come so far as to receive the grace, are not from thence in a condition to communicate it. They have a great way to advance before they become fitted for that.

This good brother had occasion to bring to me some of his companions; and Gop took hold of them all. It was at the very time that God gave me these good Religious, that the others of the same order were making all the ravages I have mentioned, and opposing with all their might the holy spirit of God. I could not but admire to see how God was pleased to make himself amends for former damages, by the pouring out his spirit in abundance on these good friars, while the others were labouring vehemently against it, doing all they could to destroy its dominion and efficacy in their fellow-But their labours of this kind had no great effect; those good souls instead of being staggered by persecutions, grew the stronger by The Superior, and the Master of the novices of the house in which this good brother was, declared against me, without knowing me; and were grievously chagrined that a Woman, as they said, should be so much flocked to, and so much sought after. For looking at the things as they were in themselves, and not as they were in God, who does whatever pleases him, they had nothing but contempt for the gift

gift which was lodged in so mean an instrument. instead of esteeming God and his grace, attending to the meanness of the subject in which he sheds it. Yet this good brother at length got the superior to come to see me, and thank me for the charities which he said I had done them: Our LORD so ordered, that he found something in my conversation which reached and took hold of him. At length he was completely gained and brought over. And he it was, who some time after, being visitor, dispersed such a number of those books, bought at their own charge, which the others had tried utterly to destroy. Oh how wonderful art thou, my Goo! In all thy ways how wise, in all thy conduct how full of love! How well thou canst frustrate all the false wisdom of men, and triumph over their vain precautions!

THERE were in this noviciate many novices. The eldest of them grew so very uneasy under his vocation, that he knew not what to do. great was his trouble that he could neither read, study, pray, nor do scarce any of his duties. His companion brought him to me. We spoke a while together, and the LORD discovered to me both the cause of his disorder and its remedy. I told it to him; and he began to practise prayer, even that of the heart. He was on a sudden wonderfully changed, and the LORD highly favoured him. As I spoke to him, grace wrought in his heart, and his soul drank it in, as the parched ground does the gentle rain. felt himself quit of his pain before he left the room. He then readily, joyfully, and perfectly performed all his exercises, which before were done with reluctance and disgust. He now both studied and prayed easily, and discharged all his duties.

from me. As for the others there are some of them who have continued stedfast and immoveable, some whom the tempest has shaken a little, but not torn away. Though these start aside, yet they still return. But those who are snatched quite away return no more.

There was one true daughter given me, whom our Lord made use of to gain many others to him. She was in a strange state of death when I first saw her, and by me he gave her life and peace. She afterwards fell extremely ill. The doctors said she would die; but I had an assurance of the contrary, and that God would make use of her (as he has done) to gain souls. There was in a monastery a young woman confined in a state of distraction. I saw her, I knew her case, and that it was not what they thought of it. As soon as I had spoken to her she recovered: But the prioress did not like that I should tell her my thoughts of it, because the person who had brought her thither was her friend. They plagued her more than before. and threw her back again into her distraction.

A SISTER of another monastery was for eight years past in a deep melancholy, unrelieved by any one; for her director increased it, by practising remedies contrary to her disorder. I had never been in that monastery; for I did not go into such places, unless I was sent for, as I did not think it right to intrude, but left myself to be conducted of Providence. I was very much surprized that at eight o'clock at night one came for me from the prioress. It was in the long days of summer, and being near it I went. I met with a sister who told me her case; she had gone to such excess, that seeing no remedy for

for it, she had taken a knife to kill herself; but the knife fell out of her hand; and a person coming to see her had advised her to speak to Our Lord made me know at first what the matter was; and that he required her to resign herself to him, instead of resisting him as they had made her do for eight years. instrumental to draw her into such a resignation. that she entered at once into a peace of paradise; all her pains and troubles were instantly banished: and never returned since. She has the greatest capacity of any in the house. She was presently so changed as to be the admiration of the whole community. Our LORD gave her a very great gift of prayer and his continual presence, with a faculty and readiness for every thing. was given me for a daughter; and also a domestic sister, who had troubled her for twenty-two years past, was delivered from her troubles, and is become a very religious woman. That produced a close tie of friendship between the prioress and me, as the wonderful change and the peace of this sister surprized her, she having so often seen her in her terrible pains. contracted other such ties in this monastery, where there are souls under the Lord's special regard, whom he drew to himself by the means he had been pleased to make choice of.

and surely that is well: But to appertain to divine Justice, oh how rare and yet how great! Mercy is all distributive in favour of the creature, but Justice destroys every thing of the creature, without sparing any thing. It can demand nothing but for itself; yet they must be voluntary victims, as have no other object but itself in what they suffer.

THE lady, who was my particular friend, began to conceive some jealously on the applause given me, God so permitting it for the farther purification of her soul, through this weakness, and the pain it caused her. Also some confessors began to be uneasy, saying, "It was none of "my business to invade their province, and to "meddle in the help of souls; and that there, "were some of the penitents which had an entire "openness for me." It was easy for me to observe the difference betwixt those confessors who. in their conducting of souls, seek nothing but God, and those who seek themselves therein; for the first came to see me, and rejoiced greatly at the grace of God bestowed on their penitents, without fixing their attention on the instrument: The others, on the contrary, tried underhand to stir up the town against me. I saw that they would be in the right to oppose me, if I had intruded of myself; but I could do nothing but what the Lord made me do. At times there came some to dispute and oppose me. friars came, one of them a man of profound learning and a great preacher. They came separately, after having studied for a number of difficult things to propose to me. But though they were matters far out of my reach, the Lord made me answer as justly as if I had studied them all my life; after which I spoke to them

as he inspired me. They went away not only convinced and satisfied, but even affected with the love of Gop.

I STILL continued writing with a prodigious swiftness; for the hand could scarce follow fast enough the spirit which dictated, and through the whole progress of so long a work I never altered my manner nor made use of any other book than the bible itself. The transcriber, whatever diligence he used, could not copy in five days what I wrote in one night. Whatever is good in it comes from God only. is otherwise from myself; I mean from the mixture which I have made, without duly attending to it, of my own impurity with his pure and chaste doctrine. In the day I had scarce time to eat, by reason of the vast numbers of people which came thronging to me. I wrote the canticles in a day and a half, and received several visits besides.

HERE I may add to what I have said about my writings, that a considerable part of the book of Judges happened by some means to be lost. Being desired to render that book complete, I wrote over again the places lost. Afterwards when the people were about leaving the house, they were found. My former and latter explications, on comparison, were found to be perfectly conformable to each other, which greatly surprized persons of knowledge and merit, who attested the truth of it.

THERE came to see me a counsellor of the parliament, a servant of God, who finding on my table* a tract on Prayer, which I had wrote

^{*} This was le Moyen court, of which an entire new ! lation is to be given at the end of the third part.

long before, desired me to lend it. Having read it and liked it much, he lent it to some friends, to whom he thought it might be of service. Every one wanted copies of it. He resolved therefore to have it printed. The impression was begun, and proper approbations given to it. They requested me to write a preface, which I did, and thus was that little book printed, which has since made so much noise, and been the pretence for the several persecutions. This counscilor was one of my intimate friends, and a pattern of piety. The book has already passed through five or six editions; and our LORD has given a very great benediction to it. good friars took fifteen hundred of them. devil became so enraged against me on account of the conquest which God made by me, that I was assured he was going to stir up against me a violent persecution. All that gave me no trouble. Let him stir up against me ever so strange persecutions: I know they will all serve to the glory of my God.

CHAP. XXII.

POOR girl of very great simplicity, who carned her livelihood by her labour, and was inwardly favoured of the Lord, came all somewful to me, and said, "Oh my mother, what strange things have I seen!" I asked was they were, "Alas, said she, I have seen you have a lamb in the midst of a vast troop of amous wolves. I have seen a frightful multimic of people of all ranks and robes, of all ages,
"cover

" sexes and conditions, priests, friars, married "men, maids and wives, with pikes, halberts " and drawn swords, all eager for your instant "destruction. You let them alone without "stirring, or being surprized and without offer-"ing any way to defend yourself. I looked on " all sides to see whether any one would come to "assist and defend you; but I saw not one." Some days after, those, who through envy were raising private batteries against me, broke forth. Libels began to spread. Envious people wrote against me, without knowing me. They said, "I was a sorceress, that it was by a magic "power I attracted souls, that every thing in " me was diabolical; that if I did some charities, "it was because I coined, and put off false " money," with many other gross accusations, equally false, groundless and absurd.

As the tempest increased every day, some of my friends advised me to withdraw, but before I mention my leaving *Grenoble*, I must say something farther of my state while here.

JESUS CHRIST was communicated to me in all his states. His apostolic state was at that time set most before me. When I could neither write nor impart the overflowing of my soul any other way, I was all languishing. I experienced what our Lord said to his disciples, "With desire "I have desired to eat this passover with you." Luke xxii. 15. It was the communion of himself by that supper, and by his passion, when he said, "It is finished." John xix. 30. And bowing his head he gave up the ghost, returning his spirit as well as his kingdom to his Father; as if he had then said, "My Father, my king-"dom is that I reign by thee, and thou by me,

"over men; which can only be done by the "shedding abroad of my spirit upon them: Let "then my spirit be communicated to them by "my death." In this is the finishing and consummation of all things. Often the plenitude of this spirit took from me the liberty of writing. I had nothing for myself; all was for others; and yet I wanted nothing. I was like those nurses who are full of milk, though they are not themselves fed thereby.

Before I began to write in the book of Kings on what regards David, I felt so close an union with that holy patriarch, that I communicated with him, as if he had been present. I comprehended the greatness of his grace, the conduct of God over him, and all the circumstances of the states through which he had passed; that he was a lively figure of Jesus Christ, and a chosen pastor for Israel. It seemed to me that all our LORD made, and would make me do for souls, would be in union with David, my dear King, and with those for whom there was given me at the same time an union like that which I had with him, but still most of all with Jesus Christ, sprung from the seed of David. this divine union my words had wonderful effect, even the formation of Jesus Christ in the souls of others. I was in no wise mistress of saying the things I did. He who conducted me made me say what he pleased, and as long as he pleased. To some I was not permitted to speak a word; and to others there flowed forth as it were a deluge of grace, and yet this pure love admitted not of any superfluity, or matter of empty amusement. When questions were asked, to which an answer were useless, it was not given It was the same case in regard to such as

our Lord was pleased to conduct through death to themselves, and who came to seek for human consolation. I had nothing for them but what was purely necessary, and could proceed no farther. I could at least only speak of indifferent things, in such liberty as God allows, in order to suit every one, and not be unsociable or disagreeable to one's neighbour; but for his own word, he himself is the dispenser of it. if preachers were duly careful to speak only in that spirit, what fruits would they bring forth in the lives of their hearers: With my true children I could communicate best in silence, in the spiritual language of the divine word. I had the consolation some time before to hear one read in St. Augustine a conversation he had with his mother. He complains of the necessity of returning from that heavenly language to words, by reason of our weakness. I sometimes said, "Oh my love, give me hearts "large enough to receive and contain the ful-"ness bestowed on me." I had wonderful intelligences opened to me, of the communication at the supper betwixt Jesus Christ and St. John, and continued betwixt St. John and the mother of our LORD; how the holy child communicated himself to the Eastern sages, and to the shepherds, conveying to them the knowledge of his divinity.

AFTER this manner when the Holy Virgin approached ELIZABETH, a wonderful commerce was maintained betwixt Jesus Christ and St. John the Baptist, who after this manifested no eagerness to come to see Christ, but was drawn to retire into the desart, to receive the like communications with the greatest plenitude. When he came forth to preach repentance, he said, not z 2

that he was the Word, but only a Voice which was sent to make way, or open a passage into the hearts of the people for Christ the Word. He baptized only with water, for that was his function; for as the water in running off leaves nothing, so does the Voice when 'tis past. But the Word baptized with the Holy Ghost, because he imprinted himself on souls, and communicated with them by that Holy Spirit. observed that Jesus Christ said any thing during the whole obscure part of his life, though it is true that not any of his words shall be lost. Oh Love, if all thou hast said and operated in silence were to be written, I think the whole world could not contain the books that should be written. John xxi. 25.

All that I experienced was shewn me in the Holy Scripture; and I saw with admiration that there passed nothing within my soul which was not in Jesus Christ and in the Holy Scripture. I must pass over many things in silence, because they cannot be expressed; and if they were expressed could not be understood or comprehended.

I OFTEN felt much for Father La Combe, who was not yet fixed in his state of interior death, but often rose and fell into alternatives. I was made sensible that he was a vessel of election, whom God had chosen to carry his name among the Gentiles, and that he would shew him how much he must suffer for that name. Oh God! who can ever be able to comprehend the pure and holy union which thou formest betwixt thy children? A carnal world judges carnally of them, and imputes to human attachment what is from the purest grace. If this union by any deviation

deviation be broken, the more pure and perfect it is, the more painfully will it be felt; the separation of the soul from God by sin being worse than that from the body by death. myself I may say I had a continual dependance on God, in every state; my soul was ever willing to obey every motion of his spirit. there could not be any thing in the world which he should require from me, to which I would not give myself up readily and with pleasure. I had no interest at all for myself. When God requires any thing from this wretched nothing, I find no resistance left in me to do his will, how rigorous soever it may appear. Oh my Love. if there be a heart in the world of which thou art the sole and absolute master, mine seems to be one of that sort. Thy will, however rigorous, in its life and its pleasure; for it no more subsists but in thee alone.—I have wandered: which is usual with me, occasioned by interruptions, as well as by two grievous indispositions. which I have had since I began to write, as also by resigning myself to the matter which carries my mind forward.

CHAP. XXIII.

TO resume the thread of my story, the Bishop of Grenoble's Almoner persuaded me to go for some time to Marseilles, to let the storm pass over; telling me that I should be well received there, it being his native soil, and many people of merit there. I wrote to Father La Combe for his consent hereto. He readily gave it. I might

have gone to Verceil; for the Bishop of Verceil had wrote me very obliging letters, earnestly pressing me to come thither: But a human respect, and fear of affording a handle to my enemies, gave me an extreme aversion thereto. When I make use of the term enemies, I must explain myself. It is not that I account any mortal to be in reality my enemy; viewing those whom God makes use of, no otherwise than as instruments of his justice.

Beside the above, the Marchioness of Prunai. who, since my departure from her, had been, more enlightened by her own experience, having met with a part of the things which I thought would befal her, had conceived for me a very strong friendship and intimate union of spirit. in such a manner that no two sisters could be more united than we were. She was extremely desirous that I would return to her, as I had formerly promised her. But I could not resolve upon this, for fear lest it should be thought that I was gone after Father La Combe. on my God, how was this relick of self-love overturned by the secret ways of thy adorable Providence! I had yet that exterior support of having it in my power to say, that I had never gone after him. There had been no room given we may body to accuse me of any indirect attachwent to him; for when it depended on myself gog to continue with him, I did not do it. habou of Geneva had not failed to write against is to (irenoble, as he had done to other places. had gone from house to house to ... Me down. All this was indifferent to me; ; ind not cease to do to his diocese all the , we say power. I even wrote to him in a. manner; but his heart was too much www. a vield to such things. BEFORE

Before I went off from Grenoble, that good girl I have spoken of came to me weeping, and told me, "I was going, and that I hid it from "her, because I would have nobody know it; "but that the devil would be before me in all "the places I should go to; that I was going to "a town, where I should scarce be arrived, but "he would stir up that whole town against me, "and would do me all the harm he possibly "could." What had obliged me to conceal my departure, was my fear of being loaded with visits, and testimonies of friendship from a number of good persons, who had a very great affection for me.

I EMBARKED then upon the Rhone, with my chamber-maid and a young woman of Grenoble, whom the Lord had highly favoured through my means. The Bishop of Grenoble's Almoner also accompanied me, with another very worthy Ecclesiastic. We met with many alarming accidents and wonderful preservations; but those instant dangers, which affrighted others, far from alarming me, augmented my peace. The Bishop of Grenoble's Almoner was much astonished. He was in a desperate fright, when the boat struck against the rock, and opened at the stroke; and in his emotion looking attentively at me, he observed that I did not change my countenance, or move my eye-brows, retaining all my tranquillity. I did not so much as feel the first emotions of surprize, which are natural to every body on those occasions, as they depend not on ourselves. What caused my peace in such dangers as terrify others at once, was my resignation to God, and because death is much more agreeable to me than life, if such were his will, to which I desire to be ever patiently submissive.

As I was going off from Grenoble, a man of quality, a great servant of God, and one of my intimate friends, had given me a letter for a knight of Malta, who was very devout, and whom I have esteemed since I have known him. as a man whom our Lord designed to serve the order of Malta greatly, and to be its ornament and support by his holy life. I had told him that I thought he should go thither, and that God would assuredly make use of him to diffuse a spirit of piety into many of the knights. is actually gone to Malta, where the first places were soon given him. This man of quality sent him the little book of prayer written by me, and printed at Grenoble. He had a chaplain very averse to the spiritual path. He took this book, and condemned it at once, went to stir up a part of the town, and amongst the rest a set of men who call themselves the seventy-two disciples of St. Cyran*. I arrived at Marseilles at ten o'clock in the morning, and that very afternoon all was in a noise against me. went to speak to the Bishop, telling him that, on account of that little book, it was necessary to banish me from that city. They gave him the book, which he examined with one of his prebends. He liked it well. He sent for Monsieur Malaval and a father Recollect. who he knew had come to see me a little after my arrival, to enquire of them from whence that great tumult had its rise, which indeed had no other effect on me than to make me smile. seeing so soon accomplished what that young woman had foretold me. Monsieur MALAVAL and that good Religious told the Bishop what they thought of me; after which he testified ·much

^{*} Chief of the Jansenists in France.

much uneasiness at the insult given me. I was obliged to go to see him. He received me with extraordinary respect, and begged my excuse for what had happened, desired me to stay at *Marseilles*, and assured me that he would protect me. He even asked where I lodged, that he might come to see me.

NEXT day the Bishop of Grenoble's Almoner went to see him, with that other priest who had come with us. The Bishop of Marseilles again testified to them his sorrow for the insults given me without any cause; and told them, that it was usual with those persons to insult all such as were not of their cabal, that they had even insulted himself. They were not content They wrote to me the most offensive with that. letters possible, though at the same time they did not know me. I apprehended that our Lord was beginning in earnest to take from me every place of abode; and those words were renewed in my mind, "The foxes have holes. "the birds of the air have nests, but the Son of "Man hath not where to lay his head."

In the short time of my stay at Marseilles, I was instrumental to support some good souls, and amongst others an Ecclesiastic, who till then was unacquainted with me. After having finished his thanksgiving in the church, seeing me go out, he followed me into the house in which I lodged: Then he told me, "the Lord" had inspired him to address me, and to open "his inward state to me." He did it with as much simplicity as humility, and the Lord gave him through me all that was necessary for him, from whence he was filled with joy, and thankful acknowledgments to God: For though

there were many spiritual persons there, and even of his intimate friends, he never had been moved to open himself to any of them. He was a servant of God, favoured by him with a singular gift of prayer. During the eight days I was at Marseilles, I saw many good souls there; for, through all my persecutions; our Lord always struck some good stroke of his own right hand, and that good Ecclesiastic was delivered from an anxiety of mind, which had much afflicted him for some years past.

AFTER I had left Grenoble, those who hated me, without knowing me, spread libels against A woman for whom I had a great love, and whom I had even extricated from an engagement which she had continued in for several years, and contributed to her discarding the person to whom she had been attached, suffering her mind to resume its fondness for that pernicious engagement, became so violently enraged against me for having broke it off; though I had freely been at some expence to procure her freedom from it, that she went to the Bishop of Grenoble, to tell him that I had counselled her to do an act of injustice. She then went from confessor to confessor repeating the same story, to animate them against me. As they were too susceptible of the prejudices infused, the fire was soon kindled in all quarters. There were none but those who knew me, and who loved God, that took my part. They became more closely united to me in sympathy through my persecution. -It had been very easy for me to destroy the calumny, as well with the Bishop of Grenoble as in town. I had only to tell who the person was, and to shew the fruits of her disorder: but as I could not declare the guilty person,

person, without making known at the same time the other who had been her accomplice. who now, being touched of God, was very penitent, I thought it best for me to suffer and be silent. There was a very pious man who knew all her history, from the beginning to the end of it, who wrote to her, that if she did not retract her lies, he would publish the account of her wicked life, to make known both her gross iniquity and my innocence. She continued some time in her malice, writing that I was a sorceress, with many other falshoods. Nevertheless, some time after she had such a cruel remorse of conscience on this account. that she wrote both to the Bishop and others to retract what she had said. She got one to write to me, to inform me that she was in despair for what she had done; that Gop had punished her in such a manner, that she had never felt any thing like it. After these recantations the outcry abated, the Bishop was disabused, and since that time he has testified a great regard for me. This creature had, among other things, said that I made myself be worshipped; and other unparalelled fooleries. As she had formerly been beside herself, I think in what she did to me there was more of weakness than of malice.

FROM Marseilles I knew not how or whither I should turn next. I saw no likelihood either of staying or returning to Grenoble, where I had left my daughter in a convent. On the other side Father La Combe had wrote to me that he did not think I ought to go to Paris. I even felt a strong reluctance to the view of going thither, which made me think it was not yet the time for it. One morning I felt myself inwardly pressed to go off, I took a litter to go

to see the Marchioness of Prunai, which was. I thought, the most honourable refuge for me in my present condition. I imagined I might have passed through Nice to her habitation, as some had assured me I might. But when I arrived at Nice, I was greatly surprized to learn that the litter could not pass the mountain to go thither. I knew not what to do, nor which way to turn, being here alone, forsaken of every body, and not knowing what God required of me. My confusion and crosses seemed daily to increase. I saw myself, without refuge or retreat, wandering as a vagabond. tradesmen, whom I saw in their shops, appeared to me happy, in having a dwelling place of their own to retire to. Nothing in the world seemed harder than this wandering life to me, who naturally loved honour and decorum. in this uncertainty, not knowing what course to take, one came to tell me that next day a shallop would set off, which used to go in one day to Genoa; and that if I chose it, they would land me at Savona, from whence I might get myself carried to the Marchioness of Prunai's house. To that I consented, as I could not be supplied with any other way of getting thither.

I had some joy at embarking on the sea. I said in myself, "If I am the dregs of the earth, "the scorn and offscouring of nature, I am now "going to embark on the element which above "all others is the most treacherous; if it be the "Lord's pleasure to plunge me in the waves, it "shall be mine to perish in them." There came a tempest in a place pretty dangerous for a small boat; and the mariners were some of the wickedest. The irritation of the waves gave a satisfaction to my mind. I pleased myself in thinking

that those mutinous billows might probably supply me with a grave. Perhaps I carried the point too far in the pleasure I took, at seeing myself beaten and bandied by the swelling waters. Those who were with me, took notice of my intrepidity, but knew not the cause of it. I asked of thee, my Love, some little hole of a rock to be placed in, there to live separate from all creatures. I figured to myself, that some uninhabited island would have terminated all my disgraces, and put me in a condition of infallibly doing thy will. But, oh my divine Love, thou designed me a prison far different from that of the rock, and quite another banishment than that of the uninhabited island. Thou reserved me to be battered by billows, more irritated than those of the sea. Calumnies proved the outrageous unrelenting waves, to which I was to be exposed, in order to be lashed and tossed by them without mercy. By the tempest swelling against us we were kept back. and instead of a short day's passage to Genoa. we were eleven days in making it. How peaceable was my heart in so violent an agitation! The swelling of the sea, and the fury of its waves were as I thought, only a figure of that swelling fury which all the creatures had against me. I said to thee, oh my Love, "Arm them " all to avenge thyself on me for my infidelities, " and for those of all the creatures." I saw thy right hand armed against me; and I loved more than my life the strokes it gave me. We could not land at Savona. We were obliged to go on to Genoa. We arrived there in the beginning of the week before Easter.

WHILE I was there I was obliged to bear the insults of the inhabitants, caused by the resentment

ment they had against the French, for the havock of a late bombardment. The Doge was newly gone out of the city, and had carried off, with him all the litters. Wherefore I could not get one, and was obliged to stay several days at excessive expences; for the people there demanded of us exorbitant sums, and as much for every single person as they would have asked for a company at the best eating-house in Paris. little money left, but my store in Providence could not be exhausted. I begged with the greatest earnestness for a litter at any price, to pass the feast of Easter at the Marchioness of Prunai's house. It was then within three days of Easter; and I could scarce any way get myself to be understoodd. By the force of intreaty, they brought me at length a sorry litter with lame mules, and told me that they would take me readily to Verceil, which was only two days journey, but demanded an enormous sum for it; they would not engage to take me to the Marchioness of Prunai's house, as they knew not where her estate lay. This was to me a strong mortification; for I was very unwilling to go to Verceil; nevertheless the proximity of Easter, and want of money, in a country where they used every kind of extortion and tyranny, left me no choice. I was under an absolute necessity of submitting to be thus conveyed to Verceil.

Thus Providence led me whither I would not. Our muleteer was one of the most brutal men to be met with; and for an increase of my affliction, I had sent away to Verceil the Ecclesiastic who accompanied us, to prevent their surprize at seeing me there, after I had protested against going thither. That Ecclesiastic

was very coarsely treated on the road, through the hatred they bore to the French; and they made him go part of the way on foot, so that, though he set off the day before me, he arrived there only a few hours sooner than I did. And as for the fellow who conducted us, seeing he had only women under his care, he used us in the most insolent and bearish manner.

WE passed through a wood infested with robbers. The muleteer was afraid, and told us, "that, if we met any of them on the road, we " should be murdered; for they spared nobody." Scarce had he uttered these words, when there appeared four men well armed. They immediately stopped the litter. The man was exceed ingly frighted. I made a light bow of my head, with a smile, for I had no fear, and was so entirely resigned to Providence, that it was all one to die this way or any other; in the sea, or by the hands of robbers. But, oh my God, how wonderful at this, as at many other times, was thy protection over me! How many perils have I passed through upon mountains, and on the very edges of tremendous steep rocks! How often hast thou checked the foot of the mule already slipping over the precipice! How often have I been like to be thrown headlong from those frightful heights, into hideous torrents which, though rolling in chasms far below our shrinking sight, forced us to hear them by their horrible noise. When the dangers were most manifest, then was my faith the strongest, as well as my intrepidity, being unable to wish for any thing else than what should fall out, whether to be dashed against the rocks, drowned, or killed any other way; every thing in the will of Gop being equal to me. The people who used

used to convey or attend me said, "they had "never seen a courage like mine;" for the most alarming dangers, and the time when death appeared the most certain, were those which seemed to please me the most. Was it not thy pleasure, oh my God, which guarded me in every imminent danger, and held me back from rolling down the precipice, on the instant of sliding over its dizzy brow? The more easy I was about life, which I bore only because thou wast pleased to bear it, the more care thou took. est to préserve it. There seemed a mutual emulation betwixt us, on my part to resign it, and on thine to maintain it. The robbers then advanced to the litter; but I had no sooner saluted them, than God made them change their design. Having pushed off one another, as it were to hinder each of them from doing any harm; they respectfully saluted me, and, with an air of compassion, unusual to such sorts of persons, retired. I was immediately struck to the heart, oh my Love, with a full and clear conviction that it was a stroke of thy right hand, who had other designs over me than to suffer me to die by the hand of robbers. thy sovereign power which takes away their all from thy devoted lovers; and destroys their lives with all that is of self without pity or sparing any thing.

THE muleteer, seeing me attended only with two young women, thought he might treat me as he would, perhaps expecting to draw money from me. Instead of taking me to the inn, he brought me to a mill, in which there was not one woman. There was but one single chamber with several beds in it, in which the millers and muleteers lay together. In that chamber they

they forced me to stay. I told the muleteer I was not a person to lie in such a place as he had brought me to; and wanted to oblige him to take me to the inn; but nothing of it would he do. I was constrained to go out on foot, at ten o'clock at night, carrying a part of my clothes, and to go a good way more than a quarter of a league of that country, where the leagues are very long, in the dark, in a strange place, not knowing the way, crossing one end of the wood infested with robbers, to endeavour to get to the inn. That fellow, seeing us go off from the place where he had wanted to make me lodge, with a bad design, hooted after us in a very abusive manner. I bore my humiliation chearfully, not without feeling it. But the will of God and my resignation to it rendered every thing easy to me. We were well received at the inn; And the good people there did the best in their power for our recovery from the fatigue we had undergone. They assured us the place we had left was very dangerous. Next morning we were obliged to return on foot to the litter, for that man would not bring it to us. On the contrary he fell on us with a shower of fresh insults. And to consummate his base behaviour, he sold me to the post, whereby I was forced to go the rest of the way in a post-chaise instead of a litter.

In this equipage I arrived at Alexandria, a frontier town, subject to Spain, on the side of the Milanese. Our driver took us, according to their custom, to the post-house, I was exceedingly astonished when I saw the landlady coming out not to receive him, but to oppose his entrance. She had heard there were women in the chaise, and taking us for a different sort of women from

--- gainst our coming ne driver was deterand a spite of her. Their ===: that a great nume garrison, with a vast who were surprized e woman in refusing to er earnestness I intreated some other house, he estimately was he bent on He assured the landlady nonour and piety too: the a seen. At last, by force he obliged her to come to : is she had looked at us, she had done: She relented at

all alighted from the chaise, . 🛥 🕾 us, "Go, shut yourselves up and do not stir, that ... und not know you are here; for as which force, as did also the servant ... if death had not so many charms : Sould have been ready to die with The two poor girls with me were under when any stirred, or were the door, they thought they were in short their throats. In short they con-.... between life and next day, when we learned that the and man had sworn to kill any woman who regard at the house; because a few days before an event had fallen out, which had like to have mined him; a woman of a bad life having there privately murdered a man in some esteem, that nad cost the house a heavy fine: And he was atraid of any more such persons coming, and nor without reason.

CHAP. XXIV.

FTER such sorts of adventures, and others which it would be too long to recite. I arrived at Verceil. I went to the inn where I was very ill received. I sent for father La Combe, who I thought had been already apprised of my coming thither, by the Ecclesiastic whom I had sent before, and who would be of so much service to me. This Ecclesiastic was only a little while arrived. How much better on the road should I have fared, if I had had him with me! For in that country they look upon ladies, accompanied with Ecclesiastics, with veneration, as persons of honour and piety. Father La Combe came in a strange fret at my arrival, Gop so permitting it: He could not hide it from me. He said that every one would think I was come after him, and that would injure his reputation, which I found in that country was very high. I had no less pain to go thither. It was necessity only which had obliged me to submit to such a disagreeable task. The Father received me with coolness, and in such a manner as let me sufficiently see his sentiments, and indeed redoubled my pain. I asked him if he required me to return, adding "that, if he did, I would go off that moment, "however oppressed and spent, both with fa-"tigues and fastings." He replied, "he did "not know how the Bishop of Verceil would "take my arrival, after he had given over "all his expectations of it, after I had so "long, and so obstinately, refused the oblig-"ing offers he had made me; since which he " no longer expressed any desire to see me." IT seemed to me then as if I were rejected

to find any refuge in it, and as if all creatures were combined to crush me I passed that night without sleep, not knowing what course I should be obliged to take, being persecuted by my enemies, and a subject of disgrace to my friends.

When it was known at the inn, that I was one of Father La Combe's accquaintance, they treated me with the greatest respect and kindness; for they esteemed him as a saint. Father knew not how to tell the Bishop of my arrival, and I felt his pain more than my own. As soon as that Prelate knew that I was arrived, he sent his neice who took me in her coach, and carried me to her house; but things were only done out of ceremony; and the Bishop, not having seen me yet, knew not what to think of a journey so very unexpected, after I had thrice refused, though he sent expresses on purpose to desire me to come to him. He was out of humour with me. Nevertheless, as he was informed that my design was not to stay at Verceil, but to go to the Marchioness of Prunai's house, he gave orders for me to be well treated. He could not see me till Easter Sunday was over, for he officiated all the eve and all that day. was all over, he came in a chaise to his neice's house to see me; and though he understood French hardly any better than I did Italian, he was very well satisfied with the conversation he had with me. He appeared to have as much favour for me as he had had of indifference before. The second visit gained him entirely.

He conceived as strong a friendship for me as if I had been his sister: And his only pleasure, amidst his continual occupations, was to come and

and pass half an hour with me in speaking of God. He wrote to the Bishop of Marseilles to thank him for having protected me in the persecution there. He wrote to the Bishop of Grenoble: and he omitted nothing to manifest his affectionate regard for me. He now seemed to think alone of finding out means to detain me in his diocese. He would not hear of my going to see the Marchioness of Prunai. the contrary he wrote to her to come and settle with me in his diocese. He sent Father La Combe to her, on purpose to exhort her to come: assuring her that he would unite us all to make a congregation. The Marchioness entered into it readily, and so did her daughter too would have come with Father La Combe. but that the Marchioness was sick. The Bishop was active and earnest in collecting and establishing a society of us, and found several pious persons and some very devout young ladies, who were all ready to come to join us: But it was not the will of God to fix me thus, but to crucify me yet more.

The fatigue of travelling made me fall sick. That girl also whom I brought from Grenoble fell sick. Her relations who were a covetous set of people, took it in their heads that, if she should die in my service, I should get her to make a will in my favour. They were much mistaken: For far from desiring the property of others, I had given up my own. Her brother, full of this apprehension, came with all speed; and the first thing he spoke to her about, though he found her recovered, was to make a will. That made a great noise in Verceil; for he wanted her to return with him, but she refused. I advised her to do what her brother desired her.

her. He contracted a friendship with some of the officers of the garrison, to whom he told ridiculous stories, as that I wanted to use his sister badly: He pretended she was a person of quality, while she was only of a low birth. They gave out what I was still afraid of, viz. That I was come after Father La Combe. persecuted him even on my account. Bishop was much troubled at it, but could not remedy it. The friendship he had for me increased every day; because, as he loved Gon. so he did all those whom he thought desired to love him. As he saw me so much indisposed. he came to see me with assiduity and charity, when at leisure from his occupations. He made me little presents of fruits and other things of that nature. His relations were jealous of it, saying, "I was come to ruin him, and to carry " off his money into France:" which was a thing the farthest from my thoughts. The Bishop patiently bore these affronts, hoping still to keep me in his diocese, when I should be recovered.

FATHER La Combe was his prebend and his confessor. He esteemed him highly. God made use of him to convert several of the officers and soldiers, who, from being men of scandalous lives, became patterns of piety. In that place every thing was mixed with crosses and souls gained to God. There were some of his Friars, who, after his example, were advancing toward perfection. Though I neither understood their language nor they mine, the Lord made us understand each other in what concerned his service. The rector of the Jesuits took his time, when Father La Combe was gone out of town, to prove me, as he said. He had studied theolo-

theological matters, which I did not understand. He propounded to me several questions. The Lord inspired me to answer him in such a manner, that he went away both surprized and satisfied. He could not forbear speaking of it.

THE Bernabites of Paris, or rather Father De La Mothe, took it in his head to try to draw. Father La Combe from thence to go to preach at **Paris.** He wrote to the father-general about it. saving, "They had no subject at Paris to "support their house, that their church was "deserted; that it was a pity to leave such a "man as father La Combe in a place were he "only corrupted his language; that it was "necessary to make his fine talents appear at "Paris, where he himself could not bear the " burthen of the house, if they did not give him "an assistant of such qualifications and expe-"rience." Who would not have thought all this to be sincere? The Bishop of Verceil, who was very much a friend to the father-general. having advice thereof, opposed it, and answered him, "that it would be doing him the greatest "injury to take from him a man who was ex-" ceedingly useful to him, and at the time that " he had the greatest need of him."

The father-general of the Bernabites would not agree to the request of Father De La Mothe, for fear of offending the Bishop of Verceil, in removing from him a man who was so necessary to him in the present posture of affairs. As to me, my indisposition increased. The air, which is there extremely bad, caused me a continual cough, with frequent returns of fever, accompanied with defluxions on the lungs, which obliged me to have much blood taken from me.

I grew

HE LIFE OF

was thought I = 1 The Bishop was much - . rut. having consulted the that the air of the - ne. whereupon he said to I had rather have you than see you = === up his design of establish-... wut me; and the Genoese lady eave ner own city, where she The Genoese besought her to set : Siscop of Verceil had wanted It was a congregation Madam de Miramion. When we proposed this affair, how-: appeared, I had a presentiment La a we succeed, that it was not what though I submissively ex good proposal, were it only to many special favours of this assured that the Lond would to prevent what he should now this good prelate saw he and it to let me go, he said to me. uiling to be in the diocese of acrethey persecuted and rejected who would so gladly have you. He wrote to Father La ... acould go in the spring, as soon .. was would permit; that he was exto be obliged to let me go; that upon me in his diocese as an the other things, enough to have watusion, if I could have attriwe was so myself. Yet he still hoped La Combe, which probably had not the death of the fatherfather-general given it another turn, as I shall relate.

HERE it was that I wrote upon the Apocalypse, and that there was given me a greater certainty of all the persecutions of the most faithful servants of God, according to what I wrote thereof, in respect to future times. Here also I was strongly moved to write to Madam De Ch—. I did it with great simplicity; and what I wrote was like the first foundation of what the Lord required of her, having been pleased to make use of me to help to bring her into his ways, being one to whom I am much united, and by her to others.

CHAP. XXV.

THE Bishop of Verceil's friend, the fathergeneral of the Bernabites, departed this life. As soon as he was dead, Father La Mothe wrote to the vicar general, who now held his place till another should be elected, renewing his request to have Father La Combe as an assistant. The father, hearing that I was obliged on account of my indisposition to return into France, sent an order to Father La Combe to return to Paris, and to accompany me in my journey thither, as his doing that would exempt their house at Paris, already poor, from the expenses of evolong a journey. On the receipt hereof Father La Combe, who did not penetrate the poison under this fair outside, consented thereto; knowing it was my custom to have some Ecclesiastic with me in travelling travelling. Father La Combe went off twelvedays before me, in order to transact some business, and to wait for me at the passage over the mountains, as the place where I had most need of an escort. I set off in Lent, the weather then being very fine. It was a sorrowful parting to the Prelate. I pitied him; he was so much affected both at losing Father La Combe and me. He caused me to be attended, at his own expence, as far as Turin, giving me a gentleman and one of his Ecclesiastics to accompany me.

As soon as the resolution was taken that Father La Combe should accompany me. Father La Mothe reported every where "that he had "been obliged to do it, to make him return into " France." He expatiated on the attachment I had for father La Combe, pretending to pity me for it. Upon this every one said, "that I ought "to put myself under the direction of Father La " Mothe." In the mean time he deceitfully palliated the malignity of his heart, writing letters full of esteem to Father La Combe, and some to me of tenderness, "desiring him to bring his " dear sister, and to serve her in her infirmities, "and in the hardships of so long a journey; that "he should be sensibly obliged to him for his "care," with many other things of the like nature.

I COULD not resolve to depart without going to see my good friend, the Marchioness of Prunai, notwithstanding the difficulty of the roads. I caused myself to be carried thither, it being scarce possible to go otherwise on account She was extremely joyful at of the mountains. seeing me arrive. Nothing could be more cordial than what passed between us with abun-

dance

dance of mutual openness. It was then that she acknowledged that all I had told her had come to pass; and a good Ecclesiastic, who lives with her, told me the same. We made ointments and plaisters together, and I gave her the secret of my remedies. I encouraged her, and so did Father La Combe, to establish an hospital in that place; which was done while we were there. I contributed my mite to it, which has ever been blest to all the hospitals, which have been established in reliance on Providence.

I BELIEVE I had forgot to tell that the LORD had made use of me to establish one near Grenoble, which subsists without any other fund than the supplies of Providence. My enemies made use of that afterwards to slander me, saying, "I "had wasted my children's substance in esta-"blishing hospitals;" though, far from spending any of their substance, I had even given them my own; and though those hospitals have been established only on the fund of divine providence, which is inexhaustible. But so it has been ordered for my good, that all our LORD has made me do to his glory has ever been turned into crosses to me. I have forgot to particularize a great number both of crosses and indispositions; they have been so many as to render the suppressing of some of them in a manner inevitable.

As soon as it was determined that I should come into France, the LORD made known to me, that it was to have greater crosses than I ever yet had. Father La Combe had the like sense. He encouraged me to resign myself to the divine will, and to become a victim offered freely to new sacrifices. He also wrote to me,

"Will it not be a thing very glorious to God, " if he should make us serve, in that great city, " for a spectacle to angels and to men?" I set off then with a spirit of sacrifice, to offer myself up to new kinds of punishments. All along the road something within me repeated the very words of St. PAUL, "I go bound in the spirit " unto Jerusalem, not knowing the things that " shall befal me there, save that the Holy Ghost " witnesseth, saying, that bonds and afflictions "abide me: but none of these things move " me; neither count I my life dear unto my-" self, so that I might finish my course with " joy." Acts xx. 22, 23, 24. I could not forbear to testify it to my most intimate friends, who tried hard to prevail on me to stop, and not to proceed any further. They were all willing to contribute a share of what they had, for my settlement there, and to prevent my coming to But I found it my duty to hold on my way, and to sacrifice myself for him who first sacrificed himself for me.

AT Chamberry we saw Father La Mothe who was going to the election of a Father-General. Though he affected an appearance of friendship, it was not difficult to discover that his thoughts were different from his words, and that he had conceived dark designs against us. I speak not of his intentions, but to obey the command given me to omit nothing, I shall necessarily be obliged often to speak of him. I could wish with all my heart it were in my power to suppress what I have to say of him. If what he has done respected only myself, I would willingly bury all; but I think I owe it to truth, and to the innocence of Father La Combe, so cruelly oppressed, and grievously crushed so long,

long, by wicked calumnies, by an imprisonment of several years, which in all probability will last as long as life. Though Father La Mothe may appear heavily charged in what I say of him, I protest solemnly, and in the presence of God, that I pass over in silence many of his bad actions.

I saw then his design very clearly. Father La Combe observed it well also. Some of my friends apprized us that Father La Mothe had evil schemes against us; but they little thought them to be so desperately atrocious as they turned out. They thought that he would discharge Father La Combe after he had made him preach, and would for that bring some troubles on him. As it had formerly been said to him, that we should be united together, so now at Chamberry it was inwardly declared to him, that we should be separated. Father La Mothe was at the chapter every day, repeating his desires to Father La Combe not to leave me, but to accompany me all the way to Puris. Father La Combe asked him leave to let me go alone to Grenoble, as he was desirous to go to see his flock at Tonon. He made a difficulty of granting him that; so much sincerity he affected.

I WENT off for Grenoble. On my arrival there I was seized with a fever which held me fifteen days. That good brother, the collector, hereby had exercise for his charity. He gave me remedies, making me only take viper broth in all my sauces, which, with the change of air, gradually removed the disorder. All those whom God had given me, the first time I was at Grenoble, came to visit me in my illness; and were filled with joy at seeing me again. They shewed

shewed me the letters and retractions of that poor passionate girl, and I did not see that any body retained an impression against me from her stories. The Bishop here manifested more kindness to me than ever, assuring me that he had never believed any thing of them, and made me an offer to stay in his diocese. They farther pressed me with new instances to induce me to stay at the general hospital. But it was not the place where God required me to be. Every thing announced the Cross to me. I was penetrated with the impression thereof continually.

THAT good girl of whom I have spoken, who had foreseen so many persecutions to befal me, had again many presentiments of the crosses which were about falling in a torrent upon us at Paris. She said, "What will ye go to do "there, to be crucified?" All along the road such souls as were spiritual, and of grace, spoke to us of nothing but crosses; and that impression that bonds and afflictions awaited me, was ever present.—I come then, oh my sovereign Love! to sacrifice myself to thy will. Thou knowest what crosses I have had to bear from my own relations, what an universal decry I am under: And yet, through all this persecution, thou dost not fail to gain souls to thyself in every place, and at every time; and I think myself overpaid for all my troubles and pains, were they only to procure the salvation and perfection of one soul.—It was in this place, oh God, that thou wast willing to erect a theatre of thy will and works by the cross, and the good to be done to souls thereby.

OF

LADY GUION.

PART III. CHAP. I.

CHICAGO INC.

* SCARCE had I arrived at Paris, when I readily discovered the black designs entertained against both Father La Combe and me.

Father

Now we approach a combination of the wickedest plots. and most abominable lies, against LADY GUION, and Father La Combe, set on foot by Father La Mothe, her half brother. and his accomplices; amongst whom we find the official, or judge of the ecclesiastical court, and at length Monsieur De Harlay, Archbishop of Paris. It soon ended in the imprisonment of both these faithful martyrs, and dear servants of their great Creator. Her fundamental principle being The pure disinterested love of God, formed in the soul by the operation of divine grace through submission, self-renunciation, fervent prayer, faithful obedience to its discoveries, and inward communion therewith. The wicked Ecclesiastics hated such a principle or doctrine as tended to wean the people from a blind dependance on them, to teach men to pray to God for themselves, and to love him singly for his own sake, for his wisdom, goodness, and perfections; clear from all views of selfish interest. Such Ecclesiastics would scruple nothing they could devise, to destroy the publisher of a free and evangelical doctrine.—As this part is by far the least instructive, containing little else than the minute account of her various examinations, persecutions, and imprisonments, we have abridged it in some places, to leave the more opportunity for a specimen of her Hymns, and that precious Tract on Prayer, which was made the handle of all that violent outcry that was raised against her.

Father La Mothe who conducted the whole tragedy, artfully dissembled, according to his custom; flattering me to the face, while he was aiming the keenest wounds behind the back. He and his confederates wanted, for their own interest, to persuade me to go to Montargis (my native place) hoping thereby to get the guardianship of my children, and to dispose of both my person and effects. All the persecutions from Father La Mothe and my family have been attended on their part with the views of interest; and those against Father La Combe have sprung from rage and revenge, because he. as my director, did not oblige me to do what they wanted; as well as out of jealousy. might enter into a long detail on this head. sufficient to convince all the world hereof: But I suppress, to avoid prolixity. I shall only say that they threatened to deprive me of what little I had reserved to myself. To this I only replied "That I would not go to law, that if "they were resolved to take from me the little "I had left (little indeed in comparison of what "I had given up) I would surrender it entirely "to them;" being quite free and willing not only to be poor, but even in the very extremity of want in imitation of our LORD JESUS CHRIST.

I ARRIVED at Paris on Magdalene's eve, 1686, exactly five years after my departure from that city. After Father La Combe arrived there, he was soon followed and much applauded. I perceived some jealousy in Father La Mothe hereupon, but did not think that matters would be carried so far as they have been. The greatest part of the Bernabites of Paris, and its neighbourhood, joining against Father La Combe, induced thereto from several causes that particularly

larly related to their order. But all their calumnies and evil attempts were overthrown by the unaffected piety of Father La Combe, and the good which multitudes reaped from his labours.

I HAD deposited a little sum of money in the hands of F. La Combe (with the consent of his Superior) to serve for the entrance of a Nun. I thought myself obliged in conscience to do it: for she had, through my means, quitted the newcatholicks. It was that young woman whom I mentioned before, (See Part II, chap. v.) whom the Priest of Ger wanted to win over. As she is beautiful, though very prudent, there always continues a cause for fear, when such an one is exposed without any establishment. La Mothe wanted to have that money, and signified to La Combe "that, if he did not make me " give him it for a wall, which he had to rebuild "in his convent, he would make him suffer for "it." But the latter, who is always upright, answered, "that he could not in conscience "advise me to do any thing else but what I had "already resolved, in favour of that young "woman." So now he and the provincial ardently longed to satisfy their desire of revenge. They employed all their thoughts on the means of effecting it.

For this purpose they sent to Father La Combe, to confess a man and a woman, who were united to commit every sort of crime with impunity, and to persecute the servants of God. I think there never was such another artifice. The man counterfeits all sorts of hands, and is fit for executing any vile design. They pretended to be very devout; and among so great a number of

souls, as came from all parts to Father La Combe to confess, he never discerned these diabolical spirits: God so permitting it, who had given power to the devil to treat him like Jos.

ONE evening before this, being alone in my chamber, retired in prayer, all on a sudden my state of childhood seemed to be taken from me, to make way for that of my being joined to JESUS CHRIST crucified. What passed in this new union of love to that divine object, himself alone knows. My state still became deeper, as I had borne Jesus Christ in his denudation and crosses, so now I seemed to bear him in crucifixion, which was the finishing of all his Nothing but experience can make any comprehend what I mean. These words at this time I felt imprest. And he was numbered with the transgressors. Mark xv. 28. And it was put in my mind that I must bear Jesus Christ in this state in its whole extent. Oh my Lord, if there has not yet been poured upon me enough of reproaches and ignominies, finish and consummate that state to me by the last punish-Every thing will be well received as coming from thee. For me to suffer for thy name's sake was the contract of our sacred marriage: And thy handmaid acknowledges thy goodness to her, continued to this day, in sanctifying her sufferings to the honour of thy worthy name.

I RECEIVED a letter from Father La Combe, who wrote to me in these terms, "The time "looks gloomy," (speaking of Father La Mothe's humour in regard to him) "I know "not when the thunder will fall: But every "thing shall be welcome from the hand of "God."

"God." In the mean time the husband of that wicked creature, who counterfeited the saint, in order to play his game the better, left off going to confess to Father La Combe, but sent his wife, who said she was very sorry that her husband had quitted that Father; she told him, that God had revealed to her things to come, and that he was going to meet with great persecutions. It was easy for her to know it, since she was planning them with Father La Mothe, the Provincial and her husband.

During this time I went into the country to the house of the Duchess of C.* There I found several persons whose interior progress the Lord made me instrumental to assist, and who were of the number of my spiritual children. I felt a strong impulse to communicate to them in silence: But as it was strange to some of them, admitting natural timidity, I failed in fidelity to what God required of me. They read a passage of scripture, which they interpreted in a manner quite contrary to the sense given me of it, which oppressed my spirit exceedingly; and the more so because I durst not speak, on account of certain persons present, who held me in a kind of bondage: But after dinner I had an opportunity

^{*} It is observable that through this part after her raturn to Paris, she is very tender of setting down the names or sirnames and titles of any of her friends. The writer of the Archbishop of Cambray's life acquaints us, that that prelate first met with this Lady at the Duchess of Bethune's house. But she does not once make mention of that Duchess, nor of the house of Charoste. And though in the IIId Chapter of this part, she informs us that the more persecution raged against her the more children were given her of the Load, yet she mentions the names of none of them, being unwilling thereby to occasion their being exposed to, and involved in, her sufferings.

nity to speak to some of them, which gave relief to my troubled mind. Often from the plenitude which filled my soul, I was favoured with a freedom to impart or communicate to my best disposed children to our mutual joy and comfort, not only when present, but, often when absent. I even felt it to flow from me into their souls. When they wrote to me they informed me that at such times they had received abundant infusions of divine grace. Our LORD had given me that spirit of truth, which knows how to refuse the evil, and chuse the good. Even when any preached, or talked of pious subjects, I felt in myself that which rejected every thing of human conception or opinion, and accepted only that which was the pure truth.

FATHER La Combe wrote to me while I was in the country, that he had found an admirable woman (meaning the counterfeit saint I have mentioned above) and gave me some circumstances respecting her, which put me in fear for him. Nevertheless as the Lord gave me nothing particular thereupon, I writ to him that I resigned him to God for that, as for the rest.

The husband of that woman, induced by the enemies of Father La Combe, wrote defamatory libels, to which they attached the propositions of Molinos, which had been current for two years past in France, declaring that they were the sentiments of Father La Combe. These libels were spread about in the communities in all parts. Father La Mothe and the Provincial, acting as persons well affected to the church, carried them to the Official, or judge of the Ecclesiastic court, who joined in the dark design.

They shewed them to the Archbishop, saying; "it was out of their zeal, and that they were "exceeding sorry that one of their fraternity "was an heretic, and as such execrable." They also brought me in, but more moderately, saying "Father La Combe was almost always at "my house," which was very false; for I could scarce see him but at the confessional, and that for very short spaces. Several other things equally false they liberally gave out of us both.

THEY bethought themselves of one thing further, likely to favour their scheme. They knew I had been at Marseilles, and thought they obtained a good foundation for a fresh calumny. They counterfeited a letter from a person at Marseilles (I think I heard it was from the Bishop) addressed to the Archbishop of Paris, or to his official, in which they wrote the blackest and most abominable scandal. Father La Mothe came to try to draw me into his snare. and to make me say, in the presence of the people he had brought, that I had been at Marseilles with Father La Combe. "There are, said he, "shocking accounts sent against you "from the Bishop of Marseilles. You have "there fallen into great scandal with Father "La Combe: There are good witnesses of it." I replied with a smile, "The calumny is notably "devised: But it had been proper to know first "whether Father La Combe had been at Mar-"seilles, for I do not believe he was ever there in "his life. I was, while there, with such and "such, and during that time Father La Combe " was labouring at Verceil." He was confounded and went off, saying, "There are witnesses of "its being true." He went immediately to ask Father La Combe if he had not been at Marseilles.

He assured him he had never been there. They were struck with dissappointment. They then gave out it was Seisel which was in the letter. Now this Seisel is a place I have never been at, and there is no Bishop there.

FATRER La Mothe and the Provincial carried about their libels, with those propositions of Molinos, from house to house, saying they were the errors of Father La Combe. They plotted together. They determined to take a journey into Savoy, to collect and bring memorials against Father La Combe and me. The Provincial set off, though but newly returned from visiting a province bordering on Savoy, giving a strict charge to Father La Mothe, who was enough inclined without it, to spare no pains or cost to ruin Father La Combe.

THEY plotted with the official, a man well versed in such artifices. They suborned that woman. She told Father La Combe "that she "had heard wonderful things of me, which had "given her an ardent desire to see me." As she farther told him, that she was in great want and distress, he sent her to me for my charity; I gave her half a louis d'or. At that time she was a stranger to me; but, after a little converse with her, I was struck with horror: Yet I kept it to myself.

A FEW days after, she came again to ask me for something to get herself bled. I told her, "I had a maid who could do it well, whom I "would get to do it for her." She replied, "that "she was not a person to be bled by any but a "surgeon." I then gave her a fifteen penny piece. She took it with disdain, then went and threw

threw it to Father La Combe, asking if she was a person to be put off with fifteen pence. But she learned that evening from her husband, that the time, not yet ripe for discovery, required longer dissimulation. She then came again to Father La Combe to beg his pardon, saying, "It was "a rash fit of passion which made her act as she "did." She asked him also for the fifteen pence. He told me then nothing of all this; but I had a certainty that she was a wicked hypocrite, bent on some bad design: And so I told Father La Combe, who chid me for it, saying, "It was "only my own imagination, that I wanted "charity, for she was a religious woman."

There came to me a virtuous young woman, a stranger, who told me she thought herself obliged, as she knew I was intimate with Father La Combe, to apprize me that he confessed a woman who deceived him. She told me of base things that woman had done, and of her thefts at Paris. I desired her to tell them to him herself. She said she had attempted it; but he told her it was acting not according to charity. In a certain shop that vile woman spoke ill of They let him know it, but he seemed not to believe it. She sometimes came to my house. I turned pale at the sight of her. My domestics perceived it, especially one, who felt the same horrors as I did.

CHAP. II. AND III.

[In these Chapters she relates how the vile persons who were suborned against her were detected by Father La Combe, and particularizes many of

the odious scandals which they forged about her. How they wanted to frighten her with the terrors of Memorials being drawn out againt her, accusing her of giving into the errors of some persons condemned by the church, and would have persuaded her to a sudden flight, in order that they might thereby have the fuller opportunity of proving her guilty. She continues thus:]

At length La Mothe took off the mask, and said to me in the church, before La Combe, "It " is now, my sister, that you must think of flee-"ing, you are charged with crimes of a deep dye." I was not moved in the least, but replied with my usual tranquillity. "If I am guilty of such "crimes I cannot be too severely punished; "wherefore I will not flee or go out of the way. "I have made an open profession of dedicating "myself to God entirely: And if I have done "things offensive to him, whom I would wish "both to love, and to cause to be loved by "the whole world, even at the expence of my "life, I ought by my punishment to be made "an example to the world: But if I am inno-" cent, for me to flee is not the way for my in-"nocence to be believed."

[She here gives a detail of the artifices and snares set on foot to ruin F. La Combe; how they misrepresented him to the King, and procured an order to confine him in his convent till he was examined. How they concealed this order from him, and then made several pretences to bring him publickly out. How they then obtained to have him arrested as a Rebel to the King's orders, and confined to the Bastile, and goes on thus:]

Though on his trial he appeared quite innocent, and they could not find any thing
whereupon to ground a condemnation, yet they
made the King believe he was a dangerous man
in the article of religion. He was then shut up
in a certain fortress of that great prison for
life: But as his enemies heard that the captain
in that fortress esteemed him, and treated him
kindly, they got him removed into a much
worse place. God, who beholds every thing,
will reward every man according to his works.
I know by an interior communication that he
is very well content, and fully resigned to God.

LA MOTHE now endeavoured more than ever to induce me to flee, assuring me that, if I went to Montargis, I should be out of all trouble; but that if I did not, I should pay for it. He insisted on my taking himself for my director, which I could not agree to. He decried me wherever he went, and writ to his brethren to do the same. They writ me very abusive letters, and particularly that, if I did not put myself under his direction, I was undone. I have the letters by me still. One Father desired me in this case to make a virtue of necessity. Nay some advised me to pretend to put myself under his direction, and to deceive him; whereas I abhorred the thought of a disguise or deceit. I bore every thing with the greatest tranquillity, without taking any care to justify or defend myself, leaving it entirely to God to order as he should please about me: And herein he was graciously pleased to increase the peace of my soul, while every one seemed to cry against me, and to look on me as an infamous creature, except those few who knew me well by a near union of spirit. At church I heard

I heard people behind me exclaim against me, and even some priests say, "It was necessary "to cast me out of the church." I left myself to God without reserve, being quite ready to endure the most rigorous pains and tortures, if such were his will.

I NEVER made any solicitation either for Father La Combe or myself, though charged with that among other things. Willing to owe every thing to God, I have no dependence on any creature. I would not have it said that any but God had made Abraham rich. Gen. xiv. 23. To lose all for him is my best gain: And to gain all without him would be my worstloss. Though at this time so general an outcry was raised against me, God did not fail to make use of me to gain many souls to himself. The more persecution raged against me, the more children were given me, on whom the Lord conferred great favours through his poor handmaid.

One must not judge of the servants of God by what their enemies say of them, nor by their being oppressed under calumnies without any resourse. Jesus Chaist expired under pangs. God uses the like conduct towards his dearest servants, to render them conformable to his Son, in whom he is always well pleased. But few place that conformity where it ought to be. It is not in voluntary pains or austerities, but in those which are suffered in a submission ever equal to the will of God, in a renunciation of our whole selves, to the end that God may be our all in all, conducting us according to his views, and not our own, which are generally opposite In fine, all perfection consists in this entire conformity with Jesus Christ, not in shining

shining things which men esteem and cry up-It will only be seen in eternity who are the true friends of God. Nothing pleases him but Jesus Christ, and that which bears his mark or character.

THEY were continually pressing me to flee. though the Archbishop had spoken to myself, and bidden me not to leave Paris. wanted to render both me and Father La Combe criminal by my flight. They knew not how to make me fall into the hands of the Official: For if they accused me of crimes, it must be before other judges: And any other judge would have seen my innocence; and the false witnesses would have run the risque of suffering for it. They continually spread the outcry of horrible crimes; the Official assured me that he had heard no mention of any; for he was afraid lest I should retire out of his jurisdiction. They then made the King believe "that I was an "heretic; that I carried on a literary cor-" respondence with Molinos (I, who never knew "there was a Molinos in the world, till the "Gazette had told me it) that I had wrote a "dangerous book; and that on those accounts "it would be necessary to issue forth an order "to put me in a convent, that they might. "examine me; that, as I was a dangerous "person, it would be proper for me to be locked "up, to be allowed no commerce with any one; "that I held assemblies," which was very false. To support this calumny my hand-writing was counterfeited, and a letter forged as from me, importing, that I had "great designs, but feared "that they would prove abortive, by the im-"prisonment of Father La Combe, for which "reason I had left off holding assemblies at my " house,

"house, being too closely watched; but that "I would hold them at the houses of such and "such persons, in such and such streets;" who are people that I do not know, nor ever before had heard named. This forged letter they shewed the King, and upon it an order was given for my imprisonment.

CHAP. IV.

THIS order would have been put in execution two months sooner than it was, had I not fallen very sick. I had inconceiveable pains and a fever. Some thought that I had an imposthume in my head. The pangs I had for five weeks made me delirious. I had also a pain in my breast Twice I received, as I and a violent cough. was thought near expiring, the holy Sacrament. One of my friends had acquainted Father La Mothe (not knowing him to have had any hand in F. La Combe's imprisonment) that she had sent me a certificate from the inquisition in said Father La Combe's favour, having heard that his own was lost. This was a very good piece; for they made the King believe that he had run' away from the inquisition; and this shewed the contrary.

FATHER La Mothe then came to me, when I was under excessive pains, counterfeiting all the affection and tenderness in his power, and telling me "that the affair of Father La Combe was "going on very well, that he was just ready to "come out of prison with honour, that he was "very

"very glad of it; that if he had only this cer-"tificate, he would be delivered presently. Give "me it then, said he, and it will be done." At first I made a difficulty of doing it. "said he, will you be the cause of ruining poor "Father La Combe, having it in your power to "save him, and cause us that affliction, for "want of what you have in your hands." vielded, ordering it to be brought and given He suppressed it, and gave out that it It never could be got from him again. The Ambassador from the Court of Turin sent a page to me for this certificate, designing the proper use of it to serve Father La Combe. referred him to Father La Mothe. went to him and asked him for it. He denied I had given him it; saying, "Her brain is dis-"ordered which makes her imagine it." The Page came back to me and told me his answer: the persons in my chamber bore witness that I had given it to him. Yet all signified nothing: it could not be got out of his hands; but on the contrary he insulted me, and set others also to do it, though I was so weak that I seemed to be at the very gates of death.

They told me they only waited for my recovery to clap me in prison. He made his brethren believe that I had treated him ill. They writ to me; one, "that it was for my crimes that I "suffered; and that I should put myself under the conduct of Father La Mothe or otherwise I should repent it;" another, that "I was frantic and ought to be bound; lethargic, and to be awakened; a monster of pride since I would not suffer myself to be cleansed and "conducted by Father La Mothe." Such was my daily feast in the extremity of my pains; descrted

deserted of my friends, and opprest of my enemies; the former being ashamed of me, through the calumnies which were forged and industriously spread; the latter let loose to persecute me; under all which I kept silence, leaving myself to the Lord. To Father La Mothe's insults I returned mildness, and made him presents.

THERE was not any kind of infamy, error, sorcery, or sacrilege, of which they did not accuse me. As soon as I was able to be carried to the Church in a chair, I was told I must speak to the Prebend. (It was a snare concerted between Father La Mothe and the Canon at whose house I lodged) I spoke to him with much simplicity, and he approved of what I said. Yet two days after they gave out that I had uttered many things, and accused many persons: and from hence they procured the banishment of sundry persons with whom they were displeased, persons whom I had never seen or heard of. They were men of honour. One of them was banished, because he said, "my little book "is a good one." It is remarkable that they say nothing to those who prefixed their approbations, and that, far from condemning the book, it has been reprinted since I have been in prison, and advertisements of it posted up at the Archbishop's palace, and all over Paris. In regard to others, when they find faults in their books, they condemn the books and leave the person at liberty: But as for me, my book is approved, sold and spread, while I am kept a prisoner for it.

THE same day that those gentlemen were banished I received a lettre de cachet, or sealed order,

order, addressed to me, to repair to the Convent of the Visitation of St. Mary's in the suburb of St. Antoine. I received it with a tranquillity which surprised the bearer exceedingly. He could not forbear expressing it, having seen the extreme sorrow of those who were only banished. He was so touched with it as to shed tears. And though his order was to carry me off directly. he was not afraid to trust me, but left me all the day, desiring me to repair to St. Mary's in the evening. On that day many of my friends came to see me and found me very chearful, which surprized such of them as knew my case. I could not stand, I was so weak, having the fever every night, it being only a fortnight since I was thought to be expiring. I imagined they would leave me my daughter and maid to serve me. My daughter was most at my heart. having cost me much care in her education. I had endeavoured, with divine assistance, to root out her faults, and to dispose her to have no will of her own; which is the best disposition of a child. She was not yet twelve years of age.



CHAP. V.

ON the twenty-ninth of January, 1688, I went to St. Mary's. There they let me know I must neither have my daughter nor a maid to serve me, but must be locked up alone in a chamber. Indeed it touched me to my heart when my daughter was taken from me. They would neither allow her to be in that house, nor any body to bring me any news of her. I was then obliged to sacrifice my daughter, as if she were mine no longer. The people of the house were prepossessed with so frightful

an account of me, that they looked at me with horror. For my jailor they singled out a Nun, who they thought would treat me with the greatest rigour, and they were not mistaken therein.

They asked me who was now my confessor. I named him: but he was seized with such a fright that he denied it; though I could have produced many persons who had seen me at his confessional. So then they said they had caught me in a lie; and I was not to be trusted. acquaintance then said they knew me not, and others were at liberty to invent stories, and say all manner of evil of me. The woman, appointed for my keeper, was gained over by my enemies, to torment me as an heretic, an enthusiast, one crackbrained and an hypocrite. God alone knows what she made me suffer. As she sought to surprise me in my words, I watched them, to be more exact in them; but I fared the worse I made more slips and gave her more advantages over me thereby, beside the trouble in my own mind for it. I then left myself as I was, and resolved, though this woman would bring me to the scaffold, by the false reports she was continually carrying to the Prioress, that I would simply resign myself to my lot; so I re-entered into my former condition.

Soon after I came into this convent I had a dream, in which I saw the sky opening all on a sudden, and as it were a shower of bright fire. There were with me a multitude of people, all of whom betook themselves to flight, in order to escape it. As to me I prostrated myself upon the ground, and said, "Oh my God, it is I "who am the victim of thy justice." I soon awakened

awakened full of certainty that I should earn this title of victim of divine justice. Monsieur CHARON the Official and Doctor of Sorbonne came four times to examine me. Our LORD did me the favour which he promised to the apostles, viz. to make me answer much better than if I had studied. Luke xxi. 14, 15. They said to me, "if I had explained myself, as I now did, "all along in that short and easy method of "prayer, I should not now have been here." My last examination was about a counterfeit letter, which they read and let me see. I told them the hand was no way like mine. They said, "it was only a copy; they had the original "at home." I desired a sight of it, but could not obtain it. I told them "I never wrote it, "nor did I know the person to whom it was "addressed;" but they took scarce any notice of what I said.

AFTER this letter was read the Official turned to me and said, "you see, Madam, that after "such a letter there was foundation enough for "imprisoning you." Yes, Sir, said I, if I had "wrote it." I shewed them its falsehoods and inconsistencies, but all in vain. I was left two months, and treated worse and worse, before either of them came again to me. Till then I had always some hope that, seeing my innocence, they would do me justice: But now I saw that they did not want to find me innocent, but to make me appear guilty.

THE Official alone came the next time, and told me, "I must speak no more of the false "letter; that it was nothing." How nothing, "said I, to counterfeit a person's writing, and to make one appear an enemy to the state!"

He replied, "We will seek out the author of it."
"The Author, said I, is no other than the Scri"vener GAUTIER." He then demanded where
the papers were which I wrote on the scriptures.
I told him, "I would give them up when I
"should be out of prison; but was not willing
"to tell with whom I had lodged them."

ABOUT three or four days before Easter he came again, with the Doctor, and a verbal process drawn up against me for rebelling, in not giving up my papers. Copies of my writings were then put into their hands; for I had not the originals. I know not where those who got them from me have put them: But I am firm in the faith that they will all be preserved, in spite of the storm. The prioress asked the Official how my affair went. He signified very well, and that I should soon be discharged: And this became the common talk; but I had a presentiment of the contrary.

CHAP. VI.

HAD an inexpressible satisfaction and joy in suffering, and being a prisoner. The confinement of my body made me better relish the freedom of my mind. St. Joseph's day was to me a memorable day; for then my state had more of heaven than of earth beyond what any expression can reach. I expected from it that there was some new cup for me to drink, as the glorious transfiguration of Christ was an introduction to his passion; depriving himself for the rest of his life of the effusions of the divinity, the supports of the human life, which he had kept before, the beatitude being suspended, the sufferings unabated.

unabated, unrelieved: In like manner I may say. it fell out to me, though unworthy to participate the states of Jesus Christ, and with the infinite disproportion of a poor weak creature to This day of him who was both Gop and man. St. Joseph, who is a saint to whom I am intimately united, was like a day of transfiguration for me. It seemed to me that I had then nothing left of the creature; but that time was followed as it were with a suspension of every favour then enjoyed, a dispensation of new sufferings. I was obliged to sacrifice myself anew, and to drink the very dregs of the bitter draught. The dream I had had, wherein all the indignation of God fell upon me, came up again in my mind.

I NEVER had any gall of resentment against my persecutors, though I well knew them, their spirit and their actions. JESUS CHRIST and the saints saw their persecutors, and at the same time saw that they could have no power except it were given them from above. John xix. 11. Loving the strokes which God gives, one cannot hate the hand which he makes use of to strike with. A few days after the Official came, and told me he gave me the liberty of the Cloyster, that is, to go and come in the house. They were now very industrious in urging my daughter to consent to a marriage, which, had it taken place, To succeed herein, would have been her ruin. they had placed her with a relation of that gentleman whom they wanted her to marry. I had all my confidence in Gop, that he would not permit it to be accomplished, as that person had no tincture of Christianity, being abandoned in his principles and morals!

[Here she continues to relate the various snares, by which they wanted to induce her to give up her c c 2 daughter,

daughter, in order to obtain her own release, and the vicissitudes she suffered. Now promising acquittance and liberty, again threatening confinement for life, and even Death on the Scaffold.]



CHAP. VII.

SOON after the Official and Doctor came to tell the Prioress I must be closely locked up. She represented to them that the chamber I was in was small, having an opening to the light or air, only on one side, through which the sun shone all the day long, and that being the month of July it must soon be my death. They paid no regard thereto. She asked why I must be thus closely locked up. They said, "I had "committed horrible things in her house, even "within the last month, and had scandalized "the Nuns." She protested the contrary, and assured them the whole community had received great edification from me, and could not but admire my patience and moderation. was all in vain: And the poor woman could not refrain from tears, at a forgery so remote from the truth.

THEY then sent for me, and told me, "I had "done base things in the last month." I asked what things? They would not tell me. I said then, "that I would suffer as long and as "much as it should please God; that this affair "was begun on forgeries against me, and so "continued. That God was witness of every "thing." The Doctor told me, to take God for a witness in such a thing was a crime. I replied, "Nothing in the world could hinder "me from having recourse to God." I then retired

retired, and was shut up more closely than at first: And because there was no key, they fastened the chamber door with a piece of wood, or bar across it. I had an interior joy at this new humiliation. Oh what pleasure my supreme Love, to be for thee in the most abject condition!

[Here she continues to relate the severity of her treatment; how she was shut up in that very small chamber in the month of July, till she was absolutely at the point of death, being thrown into a violent fever, and almost stifled with the closeness of the place, having a defluction and sore throat, before she was permitted to have any assistance.]

In the time of the antient law there were several of the Lord's martyrs, who suffered for asserting and trusting in the one true God. In the primitive church of Christ the martyrs shed their blood, for maintaining the truth of Jesus Christ crucified: But now there are martyrs of the holy Spirit, who suffer for their dependance on it, for maintaining its reign in souls, and for being victims of the Divine will.

It is this spirit which is to be poured out on all flesh, as saith the prophet Joel. The martyrs of Jesus Christ have been glorious martyrs, he having drank up the confusion of that martyrdom: But the martyrs of the holy Spirit are martyrs of reproach and ignominy. The devil no more exercises his power against their faith or belief, but directly attacks the dominion of the holy Spirit, opposing its celestial motion in souls, and discharging his hatred on the bodies of those whose minds he cannot hurt. Oh holy Spirit, a Spirit of Love, let me ever be subjected to thy will, and, as a leaf is moved before the wind.

wind, so let me by thy Divine breath. As the impetuous wind breaks all that resists it, so break all that opposes thy empire, even the towering cedars, which stand in such opposition.

IT is said of JESUS CHRIST that he yielded up the ghost, or sent forth his Spirit. (Matt. xxvii. 50.) This was both the consummation of his pains, and the consummation of all ages, even of all things, which through his Spirit shall be done in the whole world. Hence he said, it is finished, or consummated (John xix. 37.) Since his death St., Paul has told us that he shall deliver up the kingdom to God his Father, (1 Cot. xv. 24) to the end that Gop by his Spirit may reign on earth. Jesus Christ taught to pray that the kingdom of God may come, and his will be done on earth as in heaven, which implies the subjection of the whole will in the creature to that of the Creator, even without any reluctance, hesitation, or delay. Then will his reign be consummated, and his enemies become his footstool. Oh thus may all be reduced into one, though it be through much destruction of what opposes this kingdom, according to Christ's words, viz. I came not to send peace but a sword. Mat. x. 34. I am come to send fire on earth: And what will I, if it be already kindled? Luke xii. 49.

CHAP. VIII.

[She begins this Chapter with relating their artifices to compel her to a formal retraction of all the crimes of which she was accused, and to impeach La Combe, as the original deceiver. When baffled in this, they framed some execrable forgeries,

by which they made her accuse herself of the most abominable crimes, and impeach La Combe as the person who had seduced and deceived her.]

THOUGH Father La Combe be under close confinement, we do not fail to communicate in Gop. Many spiritual persons, to whom the LORD has united me by the tie of maternity, experience the same communication, though in my absence, and find in this union the remedy or relief of their pains. Oh God, who hast chosen in this poor creature to erect the throne of thy goodness and severity, thou knowest that I pass over many things, either for want of remembring, or of knowing how to express them. I have said what I could, and that with the utmost sincerity and entire truth. Though I have been obliged to describe the procedure of those who persecute me, I have not done it out of resentment, since I love them at my heart, and pray for them, leaving to God the care of defending me, and delivering me out of their hands, without making any movement of my own for it. have apprehended and believed that God would have me write every thing sincerely, that his name may be glorified: that the things done in secret against his servants should one day be published on the house tops; for the more they strive to conceal them from the eyes of men, the more will Gop in his own time make them all manifest.

At present I experience two states, that of Christ crucified and of his infant state, the one of daily crosses, very violent, without number or intermission; the other so child-like, simple and candid, that methinks if my soul were to be impressed any way, there could come nothing out of it but candor, innocence, submission

mission and patience. Oh my Gon, methinks thou hast made me a prodigy, a monument of thy goodness and wonderful works! There is wrought in me something of the original, which is communicated to me after a manner inexplicable, which nothing but experience can comprehend; 'Tis then to thee, O MY LOVE, that I render what I have writ for thee.

Done this 22d of August, 1688, aged forty years, in my prison, which I love and cherish, as I find it sanctified by MY LOVE.

I FORGOT to tell that I had a sense of the state of the souls which came to me, and of that of the persons which were given me, how far distant soever they were from me. By sense I mean an interior impression of what they were, especially such as passed for spiritual. I knew presently whether they were upright or artful, their degree or their self-love, for which I felt a rejection. I knew when they were stout in themselves, and supported by the virtue they imagined they had, by which they measured others, and condemned in their minds those who were not like themselves, though more perfect. These persons who think themselves righteous, and are thought so by others, are much more unacceptable to God, than some sinners from weakness, who are looked on with contempt; whom nevertheless Gopfavours with great mercies: which will not be fully seen but at the day of judgment. He beholds afar off those souls which are so exalted and full of themselves, though they fancy themselves humble, because they appear in some acts of humility, which for the most part increase the high opinion they have of themselves. If they were to suffer some real humiliation, then would appear

appear their want of solidity. Oh if people knew how much Gop loves the true littleness of spirit in the creature, they would behold it with amazement. When they speak to me of some person of piety, my inward sense rejects those who are not in the low state I have mentioned; and admits those who are subject to God in that state. There is something in me which refuses the evil, however glossy or covered; and greatly loves the true and solid good, I find it is the same even in the practice of virtues; or what passes for such. This spirit discerns the real virtue from that which only wears its likeness. Of such as have left this life and are now accounted saints, it esteems those most who have been most annihilated, and whom Gop has most sanctified by his own operation; it does not join in the world's cry, in attributing to that which they wanted.

It was thought I was about coming out of prison, and every thing seemed to tend toward it. But the Lord gave me a sense that, far frombeing willing to deliver me, their consultations were only laying new snares to ruin me more effectually, to make Father La Mothe known to the King, and esteemed by him. The 22d of August I waked under an impression of Jesus Christ in an agony, seeing the counsel of the Jews against him. I knew that none but God could deliver me out of prison, and I was satisfied that he would do it one day by his own right hand, though ignorant of the manner, and leaving it wholly to himself.

ONE day thinking why I could not invoke any of the saints, though united to them in God, it was put into my mind, that domestics had need of credit-and intercessors, while the spouse readily obtains every thing without asking any thing. He of his infinite goodness prevents her. Oh how little known is the holy author of all good! They examine my actions. They cry out that I do not say over my chaplet or beads, that I have no devotion for the holy Virgin. Oh divine Mary, though knowest how my heart is singly devoted to God, and the union which he has formed betwixt us in himself. I can do nothing but what he directs, depending wholly on his will.

[She here describes the manner in which Providence conducted matters, so as that she was vindicated to Madam Maintenon, and at length obtained her release.]

CHAP. IX.

[In this chapter she relates how they wanted to exact captious concessions, and false retractions from her; but that at length she was honorably set at liberty, and a few days aftewards had her first interview with the Abbe Fenelon, to whom she is united, as Jonathan to David, and stiles him her spiritual child.]

CHAP. X.

I HAVE thought of writing no more of what regards my interior state, not having words to express it, being so perfectly separated from all that can fall under sentiment, expression, or human conception.

I SHALL

I SHALL only say that, after being raised up again I found in myself, some years before my being put into what is called the apostolic state, or mission for the help of others, all selfishness consumed in the purgatory I had passed through. I found myself in a felicity like that of the blessed. Nothing here below touched me. At present I see not any thing on earth which can give me pain in regard to myself.

THE happiness of such a soul can never be comprehended without experience! Those who die in being employed in thus helping their neighbour, die in the supreme felicity, though loaden with exterior crosses.

WHEN it pleased God to honour me with his mission, he shewed me that the true father in JESUS CHRIST, the Apostolic Pastor, ought like him to suffer for men, to bear their infirmities, and to be cloathed with their very weaknesses. He inclines the heart to what he demands, imprinting on it words like these, "I was happy, "I possessed glory, I was GoD: But I quitted "it all, and subjected myself to pain, contempt, "ignominy and punishment. I became a man "to save men. If thou art willing to finish " what is behind of my suffering, and that I form "in thee an extension of my quality of Re-" deemer, thou must consent to lose the happi-" ness thou enjoyest, to be subject to weakness "and miseries, to bear the infirmities of those " with whom I shall entrust thee, to pay their "debts, and in short to be exposed not only to "their interior pangs, from which (as to thy-"self) thou hast been delivered, but to all the "most violent persecutions. If I had con-"tinued in my private life, I had never suffered

"any persecution. None are persecuted but such as are employed in the help of souls."

He shewed me that he called me not, as some had thought, to gain exterior proselytes to the church, but singly to the propagation of his own good spirit. He does not so much design me for the first conversion of sinners, as to make those who are touched with a right desire to enter into perfect conversion. Since God has been pleased to bestow on me part of the apostolic state, what have I not suffered? And yet my love for those souls, instead of desiring to be freed from it, has increased in proportion to my increase of suffering for them, even till their entire purification. Then the union, which has often been covered with clouds, becomes like a clear air, every where penetrated with the light of the sun. As to the souls which are the most consummate in the love of God, living among men, their exterior is covered with apparent weaknesses, which (like a poor skin) hide infinite treasures from the view of others. and tend to save them from being lost.

Upon first entering into the new life men find themselves so different from the rest of mankind, and think so differently from what they have been used to do, that the faults and errors of their neighbours become insupportable to them. The soulis ready to cry out, Now, Lord, lettest thou thy servant depart in peace according to thy word, for mine eyes have seen thy salvation. Luke ii. 29. But in regard to such as have the painful task of conducting others, if the souls conducted could penetrate, across their feeble outside appearance, the depth of their grace, they would look on them with too high a respect, and would not die to the support which such a conduct

conduct would give them. If the Jews could have penetrated through the exterior of Jesus CHRIST, common with other men, they never had persecuted him, but would have been in a continual admiration. These persons then are a parodox both in their own eyes and in the eyes of those who behold them: For they see no more than a plain and homely appearance in them. Celestial wisdom flows from their heart and mouth, like a spring of divine sap, from trees pregnant therewith, which communicates life to an infinite number of branches, though one sees on them only a coarse and mossy rind. Hence men who presume to judge of these souls are very liable to err in judgment, and, as says the apostle Jude, like filthy dreamers, to despise dominion and speak evil of dignities, of things which they know not, (Jude, v. iii. 10) the holy mysteries of God, revealed by him only to the souls which he has prepared to receive them.

Such souls can only speak and write through the actual light of the present moment, which lasts no longer than it is necessary to speak or write; without being able to see or think afterward on what they saw before, unless the actual light be restored to them. It is like a person to whom one opens a cabinet full of treasures, who sees them so long as it is open, but sees nothing of them when it is shut up again. Only the spouse opens and none can shut; and when he shuts none can open. Such a soul cares neither for honor nor wealth nor life. If it were not so, it could not serve other souls in the whole extent of the designs of God.

IF Gop retained these hidden souls in the secret of his presence, they would be screened from the persecutions of men: But how willingly

would they suffer fire and rack for a single. soul! No wonder if the Devil stir up all quarters of his dominion against Apostolic souls; he knows that such a soul, were it hearkened to. would destroy his empire. All exterior devotions hurt but little; for he makes reprisals on the self-love of such devotions, for what they make him lose by the regularity of their observances: But there is no gain for him to make on a soul devoted to the truth of God, and to his pure love; who lets self be destroyed by the sovereign power of God. The devil cannot approach these souls but at a distance. rage with which he is fired against them has no To be devoted to Gop, one must have no choice or preference of esteem for one action above another. People form to themselves ideas, and imagine that a soul is given to God in some particular manner: And when they see any thing contrary to those ideas, they conclude God is not there, and yet it is often where he is most. He sets no value on any virtue of our forming. A state which depends on any good, which is capable of being conceived or distinguished, is a virtuous state, but not a divine state.

The saints of the Lord are sanctified, not like other saints, by the practice of some virtues; but by the Lord himself, and by an infinite suppleness to every intimation of his will, even in the smallest things, which is the real possession of every virtue. These are saints after his manner, and not after that of men. Let there not be any virtue or holiness for meabut what flows from this spring. Thus may I, and the children whom God has given me, go on from faith to faith! Though the soul which is lost in God has an infinite suppleness of obedience

dience to his will, yet it is more particularly attracted toward other souls in which it finds an harmonious correspondence, and on the other hand appears reserved, and to have pain to speak before others, being sensible of their repugnant dispositions. One must judge of souls, even in the child's state, more by what God has done for them than by what one sees; for otherwise one would judge of them more from one's own state than from the state which they were in. What seems weak in God far surpasses the greatest force in men. It is what causes the joint alliance of those seeming contraries, divine strength with the weakness of a child. 1688.

CHAP. XI.

Upon her coming out of St. Mary's she retired into the community of Mad. Miramion, kept her bed of a fever three months, and had an imposthume in her eye. Yet at this time she was accused of going continually out, holding suspected assemblies, together with other abominable and groundless falshoods. In this house her daughter was married to Mons. L. Nicholas Fouquet count de Vaux: She removed to her daughter's house, and on account of her extreme youth, lived with her two years and an half, and even there her enemies were ever forging one thing or other against her. She then wanted to retire quite secretly, to the Benedictines at Montargis, (her native place) but it was discovered, and friends and enemies jointly prevented it.

THE family in which my daughter was married being of the number of Abbe Fenelon's friends, I had the opportunity of often seeing in and some conversations percual life, in which he environment with a sumplicity, in is I round. As the affair the made a great noise, the enters exploded. But I so every thing to him, and so enections, that nobody becomed of my sentiments than and the foundation of that as suffered, as his answers to the evidently shews to all that amout prejudice.

. . ittle private house, to follow inad for retirement; where I are pleasure of seeing my family account friends. I often went to and young ladies of that house Mad. Maintenon, that they · ... waversation something which were to God, she encouraged me to selections to them; and by the • wire of them with whom before well pleased, she found she had She then treated me with con end for three years after, while ... everyed from her every mark of processes. But that very thing me the most severe perseretrance I had into the house. which some young ladies of same and piety, save no small uneasiness to the persecuted me. The Directors at it, and under pretext of the had some years before, and of Quietism

Quietism which they said was making a great progress, they engaged the Bishop of Chartres, Superior of St. Cyr, to present to Mad. Maintenon that, by my particular conduct, I troubled the order of the house; and that the young women in it were so attached to me, and to what I said to them, that they no longer hearkened to their superiors. I then went no more to St. Cyr. I answered the young ladies, who writ to me, no more but by letters unsealed, which passed through the hands of Mad. Maintenon.

Soon after I fell sick. The physicians, after trying in vain the usual method of cure, ordered me to repair to the waters of Bourbon. lackey had been got to give me some poison. After taking it, I suffered such exquisite pains that without speedy succour, I should have died in a few hours. The lackey immediately ran away, and I have never seen him since. When I was at Bourbon, the water which I threw up burned like spirits of wine. I had no thought of being poisoned, till the physicians of Bourbon on throwing the said water into the fire, assured me of it. The waters had but little effect. I suffered for above seven years after it. Since that time three or four attempts have been made to poison me: But God has preserved me from it, through his mercy, and the presentiments which he gave me of it.

CHAP. XII.

[This Chapter contains mostly a continuation of the general decry, and persecution that was raised against her, notwithstanding the very private and retired life which she led. All being insufficient

. 21**d p**er= _2382.]

and a disposi-a trem his hand all . he to offer any se only vindicat-.... viiling to make sa sae most virtuous ___ oward them; and secution of the wick-Julea with that of the ... an animated with a gnt. Many of thesenade use of, greatly I was represented _ ., :s a strange creature. LURD, be conforma-..... i set more value on a seeing myself conif I saw myself on he world. How often accerness of my heart. said of one reproach of

e outcry and condem-

See XIII.

. dissi

with the Bishop of serviced by her intimate. She gives him the case. She gives him the service such an unction as a scher books, and that reading it, with an it needs of God on his

[She proposes to the Bishop to examine all her writings, which he takes four or five months to do, and then advances all his objections; to which she gives answers, but from his unacquaintance with the interior paths, she cannot clear up all the difficulties which he finds in them.]

CHAP. XIV.

[The beginning of this Chapter contains only a continuation of the objections, which the Bishop pretended to find with her writings, and goes on thus:]

By looking into the Ecclesiastical histories for ages past, we may see that God hath sometimes made use of laymen, and of women to instruct, edify, and help souls in their progress to perfection: And I think one of the reasons of God's acting thus, is, that glory may not be ascribed to any, but to himself alone. For this purpose, he has chosen the weak things of this world, to confound such as are mighty.—

1 Cor. i. 27.

JEALOUS of the attributes which men pay to other men, which are only due to himself, he has made a paradox of such persons, that he alone may have the glory of his own works. I pray God with my whole heart sooner to crush me utterly, with the most dreadful destruction, than to suffer me to take the least honor to myself, of any thing which he has been pleased to do by me for the good of others. I am only a poor NOTHING. God is all powerful. He delights to operate, and exercise his power by mere NOTHINGS.

THE first time that I wrote a history of myseif it was very short. In it I had particularized my faults and sins, and said little of the favors of Gon. I was ordered to burn it, to write another, and in it to omit nothing, any way remarkable that had befallen me. I did it. a crime to publish the secrets of the King: but it is a good thing to declare the favors of the LORD our God, and to magnify his mercies the more by the meanness of the subject on which he confers them. If herein I have failed, the fire will try and purify it all. When I first gave myself to the Lord it was without any reserve: And for every thing of mine, which I only did out of obedience. I am content with whatever may be permitted, or ordained, as best in the It is my consolation that God is not less great, perfect or happy, for any mistakes or errors of mine. My soul can do nothing else but love him, and repose itself in his love. It seems that what proceeds from me flows from that source: And since as many as are led by the Spirit of God are the children of Gop, an humble hope attends me that I appertain to his family.

CHAP. XV.

[The general outcry encreases. Mad. Maintenon is gained over, and becomes prejudiced against her. She writes to her by the Duke of Beauvilliers, and requests an appointment of persus to examine into her Life and Doctrine, offering to retire into any prison, till fully exculpated. But her proposal is rejected. Mons. Fouquet, one of her most intimate friends and relations dies; he had been her steady and constant support. She teels the loss, but rejoices in his felicity, for he had been a true servant of God.]

BEING now determined to retire out of the way of giving offence to any, I wrote to some of my friends, and bade them a last farewell: not knowing whether I were to be carried off by the indisposition which I then laboured under, which had been a constant fever for forty days past, or to recover from it. I wrote further, "That I prayed God to finish in them " the good work he had begun, that, if I had " contributed any good to them by his grace, " he would not be unmindful to preserve in "them that which was his own, viz. the renun-" ciation of themselves, to bear the cross, to " follow Jesus Christ with hearts filled with " his pure love; that they might judge it was " for them, and not for myself that I deprived " myself of all commerce with them, by whom " I had often been much edified; but now, if " I stayed, I might hurt them without design-"ing it, and be an occasion of trouble and " scandal to them; that I therefore desired them "to look upon me as a thing forgotten."

[She writ them a long letter; mentioning in it her particular enemies, one of whom is the Curate of Versailles, who had formerly professed a high esteem for her, visited her often, declared his sentiments were the same with hers; but of late he had imagined, that she had drawn away the Countess of G. and the Duchess of M. from under his direction. Hereupon she writes, "When "these ladies and others were in the vanities of "the world, when they patched and painted, " and some of them were in the way to ruin their "families by gaming and profusion of expence " in dress, nobody arose to say any thing against "it, they were quietly suffered to do it. "they have broke off from all this, then they " cry out against me, as if I had ruined them.

"Had I drawn them from piety into luxury, "they would not make such an outcry. The "Duchess of M. at her giving herself up to "God, thought herself obliged to quit the "Court, which was to her like a dangerous "rock, in order to bestow her time on the education of her children and the care of her family, which till then she had neglected. I beseech you therefore to gather all the memo- rials you can against me: And if I am found guilty of the things they accuse me of, I ought to be punished more than any other, since God has brought me to know him and love him, and I am well assured that there is no communion betwixt Christ and Bellal."

I sent them at the same time my two little printed books, with my commentaries on the Holy Scriptures. I also, by their order, set about a work to facilitate their examination. and to spare them as much time and trouble as I could, which was to collect a great number of passages out of approved mystic writers, which shewed the conformity of my writings with those used by the holy penmen. It was a large work. I caused them to be transcribed by the quire, as I had writ them, in order to send them to the three commissioners. I also, as occasion presented, cleared up the dubious and obscure places; for, as I had writthem at a time when the affairs of Molinos had not broke out, I used the less precaution in expressing my thoughts, not imagining that they would ever be turned into an evil sense. This work was entitled the Justifications; it was composed in fifty days, and appeared to be very sufficient to clear up the matter. But the Bishop of Meaux would never suffer it to be read.*

^{*} It has since been printed in three vols. small 8vo.

CHAP. XVIII.

FTER all the examinations, and making nothing out against me, who would not have thought but they would have left me to rest in peace? But quite otherwise, the more my innocence appeared, the more did they, who had undertaken to render me criminal, put every spring in motion to effect it. I offered the Bishop of Meaux to go to spend some time in any community within his diocese, that he might be better acquainted with me. He proposed to me that of St. Mary de Meaur, which I accepted, but in going thither in the depth of winter I had like to have perished in the snow, being stopt four hours, the coach having entered into it, and being almost buried in it, in a deep hollow. I was drawn out at the coach door with one maid. We sat upon the snow, resigned to the mercy of Gop, and expected nothing but death. I never had more tranquillity of mind, though chilled and soaked with the snow, which melted on us. Occasions like these are such as shew whether we are perfectly resigned to God or not. This poor girl and I were easy in our minds, in a state of entire resignation, though sure of dying if we passed the night there, and seeing no likelihood of any coming to our succour. At length some waggoners came up, who with difficulty drew us through the snow.

THE Bishop, when he heard of it, was astonished, and had no little self-complacency to think that I had thus risqued my life to obey him so punctually: And yet afterwards he gave all this the names of artifice and hypocrisy. Thus men who look at the tree, with an evil eye, account its fruits to be all evil. It is a strange hypocrisy which endures through one's whole

life, and which far from bringing with it any advantage in this world, causes only crosses, calumnies, poverty, persecutions and every kind of afflictions. I think one never has seen any hypocrisy like this. There are only two objects which hypocrites have in view; either to win the esteem of men or to make a fortune. I am certainly a bad hypocrite, and have learned the trade badly. I take Gop to witness, that if to be Empress of the whole earth, and canonized while living, I must have gone through what I have done (which was with the single view of being devoted to God without any reserve) I would rather have begged my bread, and died Thus I render testimony for myas a criminal. self in the presence of Gop. "That I have "not desired to please any but him alone; that "I have sought him only for himself; and that "I dread every selfish interest of my own worse "than death; that so long a series of persecu-"tions, which in all likelihood will last as long "as my life, has never made me change senti-"ment, nor repent of having given myself "wholly to him, and of having left all for him."

There were times indeed when I found nature overcharged: But the love of God and his grace rendered sweet to me the very worst of bitters. His invisible hand supported me. Else I had sunk under so many probations. Sometimes I said to myself, All thy waves and thy billows are gone over me. Psal. xliii. 7. Thou hast bent thy bow and set me as a mark for the arrow. Thou hast caused all the arrows of thy quiver to enter into my reins. Lam. iii. 12, 13. It seemed to me as if every one thought he was in the right to treat me ill, and rendered service to God in doing it. I then comprehended that it was the very manner in which Jesus Christ.

suffered. He was numbered with the transgressors. Mark xv. 28. He was condemned by the sovereign pontiff, chief priests, doctors of the law, and judges deputed by the Romans, who valued themselves on doing justice. Happy they who by suffering for the will of God under all like circumstances, have so near a relation to the sufferings of Jesus Christ!

For six weeks after my arrival at Meaux, I was in a continual fever, nor had I recovered from my indisposition, when I was waited on by the Bishop, who would fain have compelled me to give it under my hand, that I did not believe the Word Incarnate (or Christ manifest in the flesh.) I answered him, "that through "the grace of God, I knew how to suffer, even "to death, but not how to sign such falshoods." Several of the Nuns who overheard this conversation, and perceiving the sentiments of the Bishop, they joined with the Prioress, in giving a testimonial, not only of my good conduct, but of their belief in the soundness of my faith.

CHAP. XIX.

[The Bishop of Meaux, in some days after, brings her a confession of faith, and a submission of her books to the church, that she may sign it, promising to give her a certificate, which he had prepared; but on her delivering him her submission signed, he, notwithstanding his promise, refused to give the certificate. In some time after, he endeavoured to make her sign his pastoral letter, and acknowledge she had fallen into those errors, which he there lays to her charge, and made many demands of her of the like absurd unreasonable nature, threatening her with those persecutions she

she afterwards endured, in case of non-compliance. However she continued resolute, in refusing to put her name to falsehoods. At length, after she had remained about six months at Meaux, he gave her the certificate; but finding Mad. Maintenon disapproved of the certificate he had granted, he wanted to give her another in lieu of it. refusal to deliver up the first certificate enraged the Bishop, and as the understood they intended to push matters with the utmost violence, she says. "I thought, though I were resigned to what-"ever might fall out, yet I ought to take pru-" dent measures to avoid the threatening storm." Many places of retreat were offered me; but I was not free in my mind to accept of any, not to embarrass any body, nor involve in trouble my friends and my family, to whom they might attribute my escape. I took the resolution of continuing in Paris, of living there in some private place with my maids, who were trusty and sure, and in general to hide myself from the view of the world. I continued thus for about five or six months. I passed the day all alone in reading, in praying to God, and in But the 27th of December, 1695, I working. was arrested, though exceedingly indisposed at that time, and conducted to Vincennes. three days in the custody of Mons. des Grez. who had arrested me; because the King would not consent to my being put into prison; saying several times over, that a Convent was suf-They deceived his justice by still stronger calumnies. They painted me in his eyes, in colours so black, that they made him scruple his goodness and equity. He then consented to my being taken to Vincennes.

CHAP. XX.

with the state of the state of the state of the

SHALL not speak of that long persecution, which has made so much noise, for a series of ten years imprisonments, in all sorts of prisons, and of a banishment almost as long, and not yet ended, through crosses, calumnies and all imaginable sorts of sufferings. There are facts too odious on the parts of divers persons, which charity induces me to cover: And it is in this sense that charity covers a multitude of sins. 1 Pet. iv. 8. And there are others on the part of those who, having been seduced by ill-disposed persons, are yet respected by me for their piety and other reasons, though they shewed a zeal too bitter for things of which they had no true knowledge. The one sort I pass over in silence out of respect, and the other out of charity. What I have to say is, that from so long a train of crosses, with which my life has been filled, one may judge that the greatest were reserved till the last; and that Gop who, through an effect of his goodness, did not reject me, had no mind to leave the end of my life without a greater conformity to Jesus Christ. He was arraigned before all sorts of tribunals. He has done me the favour to be so too. He suffered the most violent outrages without complaining. He has conferred on me the mercy of doing the same. How could I do otherwise in the view he gave me of his love and his goodness? In this resemblance of my Saviour, I regarded as favours what the world looks upon as strange persecutions. The peace and joy I had within hindered me from seeing the most violent persecutors, otherwise than as instruments of the justice of God, which has ever been to me so adorable and so amiable. I was then in prison as in a place

of delight and refreshment, this general privation of all creatures giving me more room to be alone with God. Thus, I regarded all those great apparent evils, and that universal decry, as the greatest of all benefits. I looked upon it as the work of the hand of God, who was pleased to cover his tabernacle with the skins of beasts, to hide it from the eyes of those to whom he would not have it manifested.

I HAVE borne long and sore languishings, oppressive and painful maladies without relief. I have been also inwardly under great desolations for several months, in such sort that I could only say these words, "My God, My God, "why hast thou forsaken me?" All creatures seemed to be against me. I then put myself on the side of God, and of the creatures, against myself. How could I complain of what I suffered, with a love so clear from all self-interest? Should I now interest myself for myself, after having made so entire a sacrifice of whatever regards this self? No. I therefore chuse rather to consecrate all those sufferings by silence.

I HAVE defended my innocence with enough of courage and firmness, not to leave any doubt of the falsehood of the calumnies cast on persons whose prayer is fervent and love sincere. The speeches of their slanderers are rash, and contrary to every sort of truth and justice: And yet the heart which loves God, whose conscience reproaches it with nothing, even from hence gains an increase of strength and of happiness. Persecution is a weight which always sinks and plunges the soul into God. What matters it if all creatures are unchained against that soul, when it is all alone in sweet communion with its God, and gives him solid testimonies

monies of its love? So, since there is no other way of testifying to God that we love him, than in bearing heavy sufferings for his love, we are infinitely indebted to him when he gives us the means of doing it.

PERHAPS some will be surprized at my refusing to give the detail of the greatest and strongest crosses of my life, after I have related those which were less. I thought it proper to tell something of the crosses of my youth, to shew the crucifying conduct which God held over me. I thought myself also obliged to relate certain facts, to manifest their falsehood, the conduct of those by whom they had passed, and the authors of those persecutions of which I have been only the accidental object, as I was only persecuted, in order to involve therein persons of great merit; whom, being out of their reach by themselves, they therefore could not personally attack, but by confounding their affairs with mine. I thought I owed to religion, piety, my friends, my family, and myself.

While I was prisoner at Vincennes, and Monssieur De La Reine examined me, I passed my time in great peace, content to pass the rest of my life there, if such were the will of God. I sang songs of joy, which the maid who served me learned by heart, as fast as I made them: And we together sang thy praises, oh my God! The stones of my prison looked in my eyes like rubies. I esteemed them more than all the gaudy brilliancies of a vain world. My heart was full of that joy which thou givest to them who love thee, in the midst of their greatest crosses.

This peace was wounded for a short space,

by an infidelity which I fell into. It was in premeditating one day on what answers I should. make at an examination which was to be the next day. I answered badly. Gop, who had so often caused me to answer difficult and perplexed questions, with much facility and presence of mind, punished me now, even by stopping me short on easy matters with confusion. It served to shew me the inutility of our arguments on such occasions, and the safety of trusting in God. They who depend on human reason say, "it is necessary to look "before us, and to make our preparations; "that it is to tempt Gop, and expect miracles "to act otherwise." I leave others to think what they will. As to me I find no safety but in resigning myself to Goo. All acripture abounds with texts enforcing such a resignation.

WHEN things were carried to the greatest extremities, being then in the Bastile, I said to thee, "oh my Gon, if thou art pleased to " render me a new spectacle to men and angels, "thy holy will be done! All I ask is that thou -" wilt save thine, so that neither principalities, "nor powers, nor the sword, may ever separate " them from the pure love in Jesus Curist. "As for me, what matters it what men think " of me, or make me suffer, since they cannot "separate me from thee? Were I to please all "men and displease thee, wretched would be "the consequence. Let all men then despise and "hate me, so I may but be agreeable to thee. "Their strokes will polish what may be defec-"tive in me, that I may be presented to him for whom I die daily." I saw all men united as it were to surprize and to torment me, all the subtilty of wit employed for it, by people who had abundance of it; and poor me alone without succour, sometimes also feeling the heavy hand of God upon me, who seemed to abandon me to myself, and to my own obscurity; all my own vivacity having been so long mortified, having laboured all my life long to submit myself to Jesus Christ, and my reason to his conduct. I voluntarily underwent, as long as my health permitted it, very rigorous fastings and austere penances: But all this looked only like the burning of straw. One moment of the exercises of God is of a thousand times more efficacy than all that we can inflict upon ourselves.

[Before I enter on her conclusive Chapter, it may be proper to exhibit a view of her poetry.

In her long imprisonment, she composed, as she has informed us, many Hymns; with Poems on all sorts of Spiritual Subjects, filling five octavo volumes. Her poetic vein was free, flowing with warm devotion and gratitude. Specimens thereof have already been exhibited in several Translations, but in a manner inadequate both to the subject and to her compositions.



M. GUION's POEMS.

CANTIQUE I.

Thee singly to please,
I sing all the length of the
day;
Shut up in a cage,
Yet shelter'd from rage:
Oh listen and smile on the
lay!

From sorrow releas'd,
With solace increas'd,
The bars of my prison I
love:

All toil here untry'd,
All wants well supply'd,
I am blest and enrich'd from
above.

What if aliens are prone
To despise as unknown,
A language in heav'n understood;
Tis a feast to the taste
Of the soul that is chaste,
As it flows from the fountain of good.

Tho' my foes have combin'd, And my body confin'd, Yet my soul is with liberty blest:

I am humbly content,
With whatever is sent,
For I know that thy pleasure is best.

O pleasure Divine,
All excellence thine;
And thee will I love and
adore:

The more piercing my pain.
The more freedom I gain,
And of every choice blessing the more.

Accept then, I pray,
The tribute I pay.
I sing as a bird full of joy,
Vivacious, expos'd,
In a cage when inclos'd,
His warbling effusions employ.

Grant my hymns utter'd here, Melodious to chear, Tho' tend'rer and softer than fine: And the strength ever deign

Of my life to sustain,
Of that durable life which
is thine.

Thy wond'rous defence
Makes a cell seem immense,
It sheds so peculiar a grace
Such a pleasure abounds,
Such a glory surrounds,
And the joys of thy kingdom embrace.

All my foes I behold,
All the stout and the bold,
Perplexing their hearts with
their pain;
Confounded—I see,
While happily free,
How they vent all their furies in vain!

CANTIQUE II.

Addressed to her Dungeon.

O LOV'D solitude,
Where happiness greets;
And nothing that's rude
Embitters her sweets;
Where all the long day
Is a banquet Divine!
Can torments allay
Such affection as mine?
II.
No, welcome to love,
My pains are delights:
No torture can move,
No terror affrights.
Let 'em smite with a spear,
Or pierce with a dart,

The worst they can rear,

The wish of my heart.

Immur'd in a fort, My sole exercise, While without a support, Is my love and my sighs: For meekness in harms My glory will prove; And sovereign charms Should have sovereign love. IV. Let me faithful endure. As my sufferings, I find, The pleasures procure, Which reigns in my mind As God, from on high, Changes what would annoy; And deigns to supply Strength, patience and joy.

CANTIQUE III.

MY dearest Protector sees how they detain
My life in a dungeon; yet let me remain
While such is thy pleasure: for better no doubt
In a prison with thee than a palace without!

ıı.

No thought in my heart dare to lift up its head, But the thought which to love and to serve thee is led.

I wish'd to be thine from my tenderest age:
No lovers beside have I sought to engage,
No slender supports of the loftiest reeds,
No trust in their words, and no hope in their deeds.

In every probation to thee the recourse
Of my soul; in thy grace is its only resource.
What else can I do, so surrounded with foes,
But fly to thy goodness which heals all my woes?

When my hair shall grow white, and infirmity shake This old shatter'd fabric thou wilt not forsake.

of her's review of sof the ex-

:.:*:, **:::.**

GREAT Ther I sing Shut up

Yet sla Oh la

From Wit

Al' Al

3

v.
Imy God,
wful abode!
um of boundless
make!

enny state, adging so strait, agnothing but thee in any sight.

VI.

winds roar about;
ce storms rage without,
within is so calm and
serene!
cumbersome care,

: . . : trifling affair, ::errupting the peace of the scene!

VII

events then arise,
it descend from the skies,
in thee let me singly depend.
From the wind and the wave
Liou art mighty to save,
And a calm and a sunshine

to send.

.

Q 44 34

Human wisdom and pride,
Fing your glories aside,
Nor seduce with your sparks
in the night,
Ye so slily deceive,

That men fancy they're brave, And refuse to their Author his right.

7. -

Ye provoke with your flames Into furious aims.

'Till wrath in confusion

expires. While favour'd with light, Which would lead them aright,

How they clash in their erring desires!

O ye carnally wise, Who deride and despise All your sense what immensely transcends! What in secret is seal'd, Yet to babes is reveal'd, No critical wit comprehends.

In time then apply, This wisdom to buy; Your wills to your Author's resign.

Be humble and just, Upright in each trust, And in mercy and purity shine.

XII.

Then ineffable gains Will result from your pains, And the gates of his kingdom unbarr'd, The celestial King, In his bounty, will bring To the joys of an endless reward.

II.

O LOVE ever true, Ever ancient and new How thy favours unbounded amaze! How grace from on high, Like an angel of joy, . All around me thy glory

displays!

'Tis the ceaseless delight Of my soul to recite The show'rs of thy love as they flow. My ALL is in thee; And nothing to me Are the charms of the nations below.

III.

Thy presence inspires, And crowns my desires. Oh fill all my soul with thy love!

My Guardian and Guide When tempted and try'd! Let our union eternally move.

To my soul, to my sight, All is sweet, all is bright: For thy pleasure all nature obeys,

Here I trace all thy truth, From my tenderest youth, Thro' the scenes of my ear-

liest days.

My forces had fail'd, By sickness assail'd, Yet health from thy hand I regain'd. When weigh'd to the ground, With crosses around, Thy hand, still attentive sustain'd.

The tempest and tide With perils have ply'd, Amid the loud threats of the seas: The heights over floods,

The robbers in woods; Yet my heart was unmov'd and at case.

When of fiends and of foes Rude legions arose,

To shock me with direful dismay;

Full of faith, void of fear, I repell d their career, Thro' the force of thy sov-

ereign sway.

What can anger or pride?
Having thee on my side,
Their efforts abortive re-

The plots and the schemes,
Wild phantoms and dreams
The hearts of their authors
they wound,

How in envy combin'd,
In their error how blind,
With the tenderest compassion I view.

Their labour employ'd, In thy favour enjoy'd,

My warmest of wishes pursue.

III

ON THE EXCELLENCIES OF DIVINE LOVE.

WHEN affection abounds that is perfect and pure,
No terrors alarm, and no vices allure.
The soul, then exalted, all goodness pursues;
For honours immortal engross all her views.
Then holding her freedom, her purity bought,
Th' infernals are yex'd at their victim uncaught.

What strains can this perfect affection declare? What objects assemble with it to compare? 'Tis the richest of treasures, the brightest of gems; All thrones it outshines, all the world's diadems. 'Tis the noblest of plants, as ascending it shoots from the true plous heart, full of excellent fruits. From the smallest of seeds it will rise and will spread O'er the earth with its boughs, up to heav'n with its head. The storm only touches its rind as it blows; For the more agitated the firmer it grows. So solid and lasting its virtues are seen, Its fruits ever fine, and its leaves ever green; In all ages and climates admir'd and renown'd, From the love of the Highest they solely redound.

'Tis the first and finest of themes ever known,
All beside it give way—to behold it alone!
On every condition it preathes a content,
With the bless'd recollection of moments well spent.
It sweetens our bitters, it comforts our toil;
It melts down the mountains, and softens the soil.
It lifts up the vales as it levels the hills,
Throws loftiness down, and with lowliness fills.
Each image of gold, and each idol of lead,
As they fall to the ground, lose the hands and the head.

It strengthens in weakness, in sickness it heals, And pleasures, rewarding, to sorrows unseals. It brightens in trials, as gold when refin'd, The dross in the furnace when leaving behind. It baffles all malice, and balks her intent, Full happiness flowing where misery was meant! The pris'ner, exulting, the wonder proclaims; And martyrs, with songs, in the midst of the flames.

To kindness approaching it opens a door, Supplying all wants, and enriching the poor; The glory of countries, the beauty of towns! From crosses quite transient, to permanent crowns, The coward turns fearless of swords and of seas; And mortals, astonish'd work wonders with ease. Effects of thy goodness, O Sov'neign Divine! All the powers in the world are as nothing to thime. Each rising desire in the heart is deny'd, Which tends from thy kingdom to turn it aside. The ready suppression attracts thy regards: And sweet are the foretastes of future rewards; The hundred-fold promis'd to them who resign All the charms they delight in, and chuse to be thine.

Ambition and av'rice, and envy and lust, An army of giants, are stretch'd in the dust. The mighty Golians who vaunt on the plain, By the hands of thy striplings are speedily slain. Proud self is in askes abas'd and abhorr'd, And only the Maker of all things ador'd.

To thee then adhering, wherever they go, With how virtuous ardour thy votaries glow? Tho' rocks in the roads, or tho' desarts are found, Harmonious appears the creation around. All nature looks chearful, if foul or if fair, New fragrance diffusing throughout the mild air. The joy that's within issues forth in their views, And paradise, gracing all objects, renews.

Shou'd we buy it with suffering, and losses of all, The flocks in the fields, and the herds in the stall, With vollies of slander our characters torn, Or fierce persecutions incessantly borne, The purchase were cheap, since alone it procures A fitness for bliss which for ever endures.

IV.

MY Sov'reign engage
Every nation and age
To lay hold of thy proffers
of aid;
The motions of sin
To stifle within.

In virtues unspotted array'd!

11.

Happy change of the times,

Over ages and climes, While o'er 'em thy sun daily shines:

From each crime, and each lust,

Ever pure, ever just,
And ennobled in all their
designs!

III.

The fault is not thine,

If the sinner decline

To walk in the way that is right;

So clear thou hast shew'd,

So courted and woo'd

His return to the rays of thy

ıv.

light!

But it grieves to survey
Such a fatal decay
Of the life of the true heavenly birth;

How its beauties are soil'd,
And its fortitude foil'd,
Wide over the face of the
earth!

Ah the treacherous joys
Of perishing toys;
Of treasures a baneful abuse;
Like snakes hid in flow'rs,
Or harlot's amours

Which deadly distempers adduce!

They plunge into woes,
Which admit no repose,
Where insolent spirits infest:

Their mirth and their wit,

And their scorning, unfit

To join in the joys of the

blest!

VII.

Who vices refuse,

And rectitude chuse,

Can never repent of their
choice.

True freedom, alone,
True bliss is their own,
Who hearken and follow
thy voice.

WIII.

Tho' so high on thy throne,
'Tis thy joy to make known
Thy secrets unseal'd, to the
wise.

In affection Divine,
As in action, they shine,
And thy mercies they thankfully prize.

Thy word to fulfil,
To conform to thy will,
The permanent mark of the
mind!
With these they converse.

With thee they converse,
And rejoice to rehearse
Thy laws, and thy love to
mankind.

When these meet on high, In a lovelier sky, Where their Sov'reign and Saviour appears;

All beauties are found,
All pleasures abound,
And his infinite goodness

endears.

Their labours all o'er,
Their troubles no more,
Triumphing in lustre improv'd,

prov'd,
What joys will they know,
From the fountain to flow,
Ever loving, and ever belov'd!

Who can cease to admire,
O Sov'reign and Sire,
How thy greatness and
goodness unite!

Then deprived of his crown Busy sale is thrown down, When we come to behold things aright.

M. GUIQN's

Experience of Divine Communion-A Poem,

Prophesying that the Light of the Gospai should reach to, and spread in distant Countries, separate Islands, and other Hemispheres.

CHRIST TO HIS SPOUSE.

O THOU dear object of my fixt delight,
True to my laws, and beauteons in my sight,
Obsequious, chaste, effervent with the dart
Of pure affection in thy constant heart!
My Bride elected! All Thy self resign:
For ever faithful to thy bridegroom shine,
As when thy toils, in prior days pursu'd,
No stipend sought, no sordid wish allow'd.

When in the maze of thorny paths I led, Or on the cliffs where briary thickets bred, Thy course was dauntless, while it seem'd alone, And faith undevious from the path unknown.

Pleas'd I beheld thy vigilance and fears, Reliev'd thy sighs, allay'd thy gushing tears, Look'd on thy conflicts, heard thy suppliant strain, And arm'd with patience in the depth of pain.

When death stood threat'ning, still my Spouse resign'd Call'd not my love inconstant or unkind.

Thy loads were pond'rous: I the burden blest,
Tho' fancied distant from thy soul distrest.

No placid ease, or gay diversion sought,
None but the succours which my pleasure brought.

With lenient balm I sooth'd each pain and fright,
Within thy bosom, yet without thy sight.

This then thy language, "O my dearest Spouss,

"With thee to suffer is the lot I chuse.

"For thee to labour is thy lover's scope:
"Thy smile her only happiness and hope!

"All gems beside it are but void and vain:
"They wound her peace, and tantalize her pain.

* Perhaps the British Isles, which have been highly favoured, also, America, and even Greenland, where the Gospel has been mathfully propagated by some PATIENT LABOURERS from Germany.

"One look of thine (why turn'd away those eyes?)

"Fills with new raptures, and new life supplies."
I saw thee struggling with incumbent throes,
As to my throne thy pray'r, emergent, rose.
No pow'r exterior gave internal rest,
Or gain'd a seat and sceptre in thy Breast,
It softly breath'd, "O Witness of my love,
"Look down auspicious, from the realms above.
"O rock of ages! Nothing here below

"I crave, enrich'd if thy compassion flow:"
When yet too weak I saw thy willing mind
For full refinement, which my grace design'd,
I call'd, "exert thy double fortitude,

"No baits, delicious to the senses view'd.

" For such our league: If thou'lt be wholly mine,

"Thou must all darlings, and thyself resign, "Cast each warm wish of all thy bliss aside,

And rest in mine completely satisfy'd.

" Endure with patience. Let no conflicts tire;

"To see me glorious be thy sole desire."

What in such conscious solitude I said,
Thine ear attended, and thy heart obey'd.
My chearing voice thy vivid hope advanc'd,
And the chaste ardour of thy love enhane'd.
Unseen, unknown, thou would'st have instant dy'd,
To give bright pledges of a faithful Bride.
All beauty's charms in dark oblivion caught,
All selfish interests in the dust unsought,
Thou cry'd, "I'm fair if faithful to my Lord,

"Whose wond'rous favors on his Spouse are stor'd."

At length all murmurs on thy lips decay'd:
All fell in silent resignation laid.
Silence profound! It's marv'lous glow refines,
And human wit, and wisdom, far outshines.
All words are worthless, where its beams abound,
When mutual converse melts without a sound.

Thus in the woods thou past thy pleasing youth, Alone enraptur'd with celestial truth, In reverend stillness heard my language there, And wish'd no human eloquence to hear. It wrought its wonders, and thy pangs it heal'd, And joyous myst'ries of my realm reveal'd, Unveil'd my beauty; with my goodness blest; Source of thy toils, and temple of thy rest!

'Twas then thy soul in clearest lustre saw,
How senses, pamper'd, into bondage draw.
Thy hands refus'd, whate'er would gratify,
Their keen demand, superfluous, to supply.
All charms then darken'd which had once been bright,
As stars all vanish from the solar light.

Each wish was ONE, as when the lucid rays, To one fix'd point collected, hostly blaze. Then in new freedom soar'd thy flaming love, High on the pinions of the peaceful dove; Of these great favours all the grateful fame, To distant nations, ardent to proclaim.

HER SOLILOQUY AND ADDRESS.

SUCH salutation, from my Sov'reign Spouse, Hail'd in his Bride a boundless love to rouse, Of secret Self to drown the sly controul, And fix in perfect purity of soul. No more I wish'd of transient joys to view, No more my audience vain discourses drew.

"Oh grant new pow'rs, I pray'd, my Love supreme,

". For promulgation of the worthiest theme:

"Nor longer leave my fervour thus confin'd,

"Since thy refulgence on my soul has shin'd!
"Thy boundless goodness now my soul surveys,

"' 'Tis lost in wonder, and 'tis fill'd with praise.

"Rapt with thy beauties and exempt from fear,

" I must resound'em, tho' the worst I bear."

Ye sever'd isles, and Hyperborean plains
Whose woods lie fetter'd in their icy chains,
Whose piercing blasts deprive your dreary glades
Of the sweet fragrance of the Southern shades,
To you, tho' distant, in his name I call;
Oh live devoted to the Lord of All.
Your gates immortal to his grace unfold;
And ye'll exult in blessings yet untold,
In the high glories of perpetual hills,
In the sweet solace of celestial rills.

If no repugnance intercept the rays
Which rise to bless you with the best of days,
All wants redress'd, a brighter sun will glow,
And endless love in blissful union flow,
Your heart and hands in generous acts employ,
And crown your labour with transcendent joy.

Ye stately fabrics in th' enamel'd fields,
Where art improves what lovely nature yields;
Ye beauteous hills for pearly fruits renown'd,
Ye crowns of vines which deck their summits round,
Ye wide canals which cost amazing toil,
Ye streams which murmur o'er the flow'ry soil,
Oh since your lords, decoy'd with earthly views,
Neglect the Giver, and the gifts misuse,
Since peace fraternal yields to selfish strife,
And graceful virtue to luxurious life,
I leave, lamenting, your infected state,
And waft my words to regions less elate.

Ye then who hold you Western hemisphere,
Or whose long darkness ends your frigid year,
Within your breasts your Author's love enclose,
To thaw your ice, and melt your chilling snows.
He courts a refuge in your nations. Chuse
Him for your Load, nor offer'd bliss refuse.
His due reception renders every place
Fair in his sight and honour'd with his grace.
He lifts aloft, and wings to bliss from wee
A race of rebels in the world below,
Broke from the bonds of dastard fear and shame,
By virtue fervent with celestial flame.
Ye fruitless tracts, whose hapless towns are thin,

Ye fruitless tracts, whose hapless towns are thin, Oh, if he shields you from the shafts of sin; His perfect goodness if your tribes revere, And to his laws, in spotless lives adhere.; Then all its wildness will the waste forego, Then clustering grapes for noxious brambles grow. But righteous judgment will at last surprize, If mortals, call'd, the gracious call despise.

SOME short Pieces taken from her Book of Emblems, which appear to have been the productions of her younger days.

1

HOW endanger'd was I, when distant from thee,
When sins had an absolute reign;
When frantic with joy, from restriction if free,
I rush'd into sports with the vain!

When idle amusements attracted my heart,
When I heard, and yet fled, from thy voice;
Applauding my folly for flying apart,
And blindly pursuing her choice!

I now see it all with a pungent regret;
Of my rashness I deeply repent.
Oh deign, I beseech, to forgive and forget,
To thy will let me fully be bent!

HOW long I resisted a gracious Gon,
Who kindly vouchsafd to invite!
Ah, rebel I was, well deserving his rod,
And to sink in the horrors of night.

I submit, I surrender myself to thy will:
And nothing I hope from my tears.

Thy righteous sentence let justice fulfil; So my soul be set free from her fears.

111.

Great Author of goodness, my heart with thy love Has been smitten and felt its delight : Then every delay from obedience remove, And turn what is wrong all aright.

NO pains I deplore,
W hich are paid to my
fault;
Chastise me yet more,
To revenge the revolt.

I'm asham'd and I grieve,

As thy goodness I find So swift to relieve, To caress meso kind.

Not thy mercies alone,
But thy justice I crave,
What best will atone
My relapse, to receive:

Of such a transgression
How painful the sense!

Will the loudest confession Efface its offence?

Will my shameful condition
Be heal'd with regret?
Will floods of contrition
E'er-cancel the debt?

Oh unjust and ingrate!
Let thy hand be severe,
Let me suffer its weight
'Till I'm fix'd in thy fear.

Redouble my pain,
So my sins be but lost;
I will count it all gain,
And not care what it cost.

O DRAW me, my Spouse, and thy steps I'll pursue; For around thee how every thing blooms!

How sweet is all nature, how beauteous to view!

How reviving with od'rous perfumes!

Here the Spouse stopt me short, as a novice in love;
In such terms, in his turn, he reply'd;
"Weak lovers cry out for attractions to move:
"And are false and inconstant when try'd."

There's a shorter, yet worthier, path to be trod, A path of the love which is pure: Where troubles, or tortures, the lover of Gon Is willing for him to endure:

No road strew'd with roses expecting to find, But a life of resemblance to mine.

I suffered

I suffer'd for sinners, to death was resign'd, And agonies link'd in a line.

The self-pleasing path be no longer survey'd,
Nor cherish a hope to rejoice:
By tracing me here let thy love be display'd
And then thou wilt merit my choice."

CHAP. XXI. AND LAST.

AS my life has ever been consecrated to the cross, I was no sooner out of prison, and my spirit began to breathe a little, after so many persecutions, but my body was afflicted with all sorts of infirmities. I have had almost continual maladies, which often brought me to the very verge of death.

In these last times I can hardly speak at all of my dispositions. For my state is become quite simple and without any variations. It is a profound annihilation. I find nothing in myself to which I can give a name. All that I know is that God is infinitely holy, righteous, good and happy. I see nothing below myself, nothing more unworthy of his bounties than I am. acknowledge that God has heaped favours on me, enough to save a world, which I have requited too much with ingratitude. All good is in HIM; I am a mere Nothing. To me every condition seems equal. All is lost in his immensity, like a little drop of water in the sea. In this divine immensity the soul sees itself no more, but it discerns every object in God, without discerning them otherwise than by the feeling of the heart. All is darkness in regard to itself, all is light on the side of God, who lets me be ignorant of nothing that is proper, or of real advantage. There is here neither clamour,

clamour, nor sorrow, nor pain, nor vain pleasures nor uncertainty; but a perfect peace; not in self, but in God: No interest for self, no anxiety, recollection or bustle for self. If any think there is any good in me, they are mistaken, and by such thought do injury to my Lord. All good is in him and for him. The greatest satisfaction I can have is because HE IS WHAT HE IS; and will be so for ever. If he save me, it must be gratuitously; for I have neither merit nor desert.

I AM astonished that any should place confidence in such a poor nothing creature as I am. I have sometimes said it. Nevertheless, I answer what they ask without difficulty. My own will and inclinations are vanished. Poverty and nakedness are my portion. Sometimes indeed I could wish to undergo the worst of sufferings, so that souls might be brought thereby to know and love God.

I DEARLY love the church: whatever wounds that, wounds me. I seek nothing for myself. I study nothing; but there are given me immediately, as occasion requires, the most weighty and powerful words. If I wanted to have them they would escape me, and I gould by no means catch or recover them. When I have something to say, if I am interrupted all is lost. I am then like a child from whom his apple is secreted. He looks about for it, but I feel the loss for a moment, in vain : it is gone. but forget it instantly. My God keeps me in an extreme simplicity, godly sincerity, uprightness of heart, and enlargedness of spirit, in such sort that, as to particular things, I seem to look from and above them, and to see nothing at all of them except when occasions present them.

and the second violation with the second in with them, not according specialists of mine, but according to ... or uraid of any of them laying _ -- Conscious of -a ____ ind uprightness, I cannot to precautions in any of these i una rudence! How opposite do amplicity of Jesus Christ! seem, is in following him in and if to survet would make me an Empress, a sec se set or were my simplicity to e eaviest sufferings I could not Liver tous C

He is rich, I am poor; and yet I Life or death, time or eternity, me. All is eternity, all is God, with I have said, or written, is from me. I remember little or I want neither justification nor int nothing but God and his glory.

It he sees it best, glorify himself the one or the other bears equal balance with me.

will not deceive or mislead to Gorto enlighten you, and the sea esteem or disesteem for me. I will not deceive or mislead to me to keep my place and go no more to move from my centre. I pray the clear discernment of his holy will,

that no false light may ever lead you to the precipice.

O My dear children, open your eyes to the light of truth. Holy Father, sanctify them through thy truth. Thy divine word has spoken to them through my mouth. Chair alone is the Truth. He said of his apostles For their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also may be sanctified through the truth. Oh say the same thing to my children. Sanctify thyself in them and for them. It is being truly sanctified in all holiness, to have none of our own but the holiness of Jesus Christ. Let him alone be all in all in us and for us, that the work of sanctification may be carried on through the experimental knowledge of the divine truth. To him belongeth all wisdom; strength, greatness, power and glory; to us poverty, emptiness, weakness, misery, and what not! Let us abide in our nothingness, paying homage to his Holiness: Then shall we find in him all that we want. If we seek for any thing for Selr out of him, then however hely he may appear to us, we are liars, and the truth abideth not in us. We deceive ourselves, and in that state shall never be the saints of Goo,—for they, having no other holiness than his, have renounced all selfish usurpation of his sacred rights.

HOLY FATHER, I have committed into thine hands those whom thou hast given me; keep them in thy truth, that the lie may not come near them; for to attribute any thing to one's self is to be in the lie. Make them know this to be the great truth of which thou art jealous. All language which deviates from this principle is falshood. He who speaks the All of God and nothing of the Creature, is in the

1):

in usurpation
in him. My
in from your
ife. Receive
in out as of God,
is Christ!

5 I O N.

shall read this, not to ersons, who through a have pushed things so ... and against one so Zaulerus says in his ... God willing to purify ... might permit an infinite coness toward that soul, in chosen vessel, by the . uegments in such a state of .. List at last, after having he will take away the veil ... rom their eyes, not treating . for a fault which they have Sough a hidden conduct of his ... ve send an angel from heaven. vessel through tribulations, December, 1709.

ther own Narrative, though the above seven years after that the had wrote being only done the commands of her director. June, 1717, at Blois, in the

was of her age.]

SHORT AND EASY METHOD

OF

PRAYER.

TRANSLATED FROM THE FRENCH

0F

MADAM J. M. B. DE LA MOTHE GUION.

BY THOMAS DIGBY BROOKE.

THE TRANSLATOR'S PREFACE.

THE following excellent book was the first essay of the truly pious Madam Guion; it was, quickly after its publication, dispersed through great part of France; and it proved the happy instrument of many conversions. These who were athirst for righteousness, eagerly imbibed the simple and efficacious precepts it contains; and those who had already made advances in the Divine Life were convinced of the truth of their way, and found ample instructions how to proceed. None who were advocates for genuine piety, could be offended at it; as the most salutary instructions for the attainment of Christian Perfection are enforced, without being blended with such matters of opinion as cause offence.

Through the treatise, it is certain, that there are two fundamental truths taken for granted, namely, The Fall and The Redemption: and, indeed, whosoever doth not inwardly feel the former, cannot experience the benefit of the latter; he hath no business with this book, nor even with The Bible; "he is whole, and needeth not a Physician."

Should but a few of my Christian Brethren reap advantage from this attempt to bring to light a treasure that has lain so long hidden and unnoticed, it would be, not only an abundant recompence for any little trouble I may have had in the translation, but also an encouragement to publish some other pieces of this illuminated Author.

THE

THE AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

THIS little treatise, conceived in great simplicity, was not originally intended for publication: it was written for a few individuals, who were desirous to love God with their whole heart; some of whom, because of the profit they received in reading the manuscript, wished to obtain copies of it; and, on this account alone, it was committed to the press.

It still remains in its original simplicity, without any censure on the various Divine Leadings of others: and we submit the whole to the judgment of those, who are skilled and experienced in Divine matters; requesting them, however, not to decide, without first entering into the main design of the Author, which is to induce the world to love God, and to serve him with comfort and success, in a simple and easy manner, adapted for those who are unqualified for learned and deep researches, and are, indeed, incapable of any thing but a hearty desire to be truly devoted to God.

An unprejudiced reader may find, hidden under the most common expressions, a secret unction, which will excite him to seek after that Sovereign Good, whom all should wish to

enjoy.

In speaking of the attainment of perfection, the word FACI-LITY is used; because God is, indeed, found with facility, when we seek him within ourselves. But, in contradiction to this, some, perhaps, may urge that passage in St. John, "Ye" shall seek me, and shall not find me;" (Chap. vii. 34.) this apparent difficulty, however, is removed by another passage, where he, who cannot contradict himself, has said to all, "seek" and ye shall find." (Matt. vii. 7.) It is true, indeed, that he who would seek God, and is yet unwilling to forsake his sins, shall not find him, because he seeks not aright; and therefore, it is added, "Ye shall die in your sins." On the other hand, he, who diligently seeks God in his heart, and that he may draw near unto him sincerely forsakes his sin, shall infallibly find him.

A Life of Piety appears so formidable, and The Spirit of Prayer of such difficult attainment, that most persons are discouraged from taking a single step towards it. The difficulties inseparable inseparable from all great undertakings, are, indeed, either nobly surmounted, or left to subsist in all their terrors, just as Success is the object of despair or hope. I have, therefore, endeavoured to shew the facility of the method proposed in this treatise, the great advantages to be derived from it, and the certainty of their attainment by those that faithfully persevere. O were we once truly sensible of the Goodness of God towards his poor creatures, and of his infinite desire to communicate himself unto them, we should not affright ourselves with ideal monsters, nor despair of obtaining that good which He is so earnest to bestow: "He that spared not his own son, but delivered him up for us all; how shall he not, with him, also freely give us all things?" (Rom. vii. 32.) But we want courage and perseverance; we have both, to a high degree, in our temporal concerns, but want them in "the one" thing needful." (Luke x. 42.)

If any think, that God is not easily to be found in this way of Simple Love and Pure Adherence, let them not, on my testimony, alter their opinion, but rather make trial of it; and their own experience will convince them, that the reality far

exceeds all my representations of it.

Beloved reader, peruse this little tract with an humble, sincere, and candid spirit, and not with an inclination to cavil and criticise, and you will not fail to reap some degree of profit from it. It was written with a hearty desire that you might wholly devote yourself to God; receive it then, with a like desire for your own perfection: for nothing more is intended by it, than to invite the Simple and the Child-like to approach their Father, who delights in the humble confidence of his children, and is grieved at the smallest instance of their diffidence or distrust. With a sincere desire, therefore, to forsake sin, seek nothing from the inartificial method here proposed, but the Love of God, and you shall undoubtedly obtain it.

Without setting up our opinions above those of others, we mean only with truth and candour to declare, from our own experience and the experience of others, the happy effects pro-

duced by thus SIMPLY FOLLOWING OUR LORD.

As this treatise was intended only to instruct in PRAYER, there are many things which we respect and esteem totally omitted, as not immediately relative to our main subject: it is, however, certain, that nothing will be found herein to disgust or offend, provided it be read in the spirit with which it was written; and it is still more certain, that those who in right earnest make trial of the way, will find we have written The

It is Thou alone, O Holy Jesus, who lovest simplicity and innocence, "and whose delight is to dwell with the children "of men;" (Prov. viii. 3.) with those who are, indeed, willing to become "Little Children:" it is Thou alone who canst

Yدُخدَ الله الشاب

The control of the co

ms presence, and maintained in it

inco, value species of prayer, which may be existence, value doth not obstruct outward employments of capably practised by kings, princes, maintagestrates, soldiers and children, tradestrates, and sick persons. It cannot, therefore the nearl, but of the heart; not a prayer of sections, which is so limited in its operations are the outstupend by the exercises of reason. Indeed this prayer but irregular and disordered that the capable to be the same one we have tasted of God, and the section, we shall find it impossible to relish ought

name obtained as the possession and enjoyin him we live, move, and have our
in him we live, move, and have our
in him we live, move, and have our
in him; and to seek aright, is easier and
have breathing. Though you think yourin him; aud, incapable of sublime attainments,
in him you live in Gon himself with less difficulty
have you live in the vital air. Will it not be
in himself prayer? But I trust you will not,
have carnet the method, which is exceedingly easy.

CHAP. II.

VHE METHOD OF PRAYING.

ways of introducing a soul into prayer, was some time be pursued; the one is mediated accompanied with meditation.

is the choosing some important practical and prowhich a ways preferring the practical, and prowhich are truth you have chosen, read only a

in the passage: when this remains in the passage: when this
which remains in the passage: when this
which remains in the passage: when this
selform.

seldom reading more than half a page at a time; for it is not the quantity that is read, but the manner of reading, that yields us profit. Those who read fast, reap no more advantage than a bee would by only skimming over the surface of the flower, instead of waiting to penetrate into it, and extract its sweets. Much reading is rather for scholastic subjects, than divine truths: indeed, to receive real profit from spiritual books, we must read as I have described; and I am certain if that method were pursued, we should become gradually habituated to, and

more fully disposed, for prayer.

Meditation, which is the other method, is to be practised at an appointed season, and not in the time of reading. I believe the best manner of meditating is as follows. When by any act of lively faith, you are placed in the presence of Gop, recollect some truth wherein there is substance and food: pause gently and sweetly thereon, not to employ the reason, but merely to calm and fix the mind: for you must observe, that your particular exercise should ever be the presence of Gop; your subject, therefore, should rather serve to stay the mind, than exercise the understanding. From this procedure, it will necessarily follow, that the lively faith in a God immediately present in our inmost soul, will produce an eager and vehement pressing inwardly into ourselves, and restraining all our senses from wandering abroad: this serves to extricate us speedily from numberless distractions, to remove us far from external objects, and to bring us nigh unto our Goo, who is only to be found in our inmost centre, which is the Holy of Holies wherein he dwelleth. He hath even promised " to come and make his abode with him that doth his will." (John xiv. 23.) St. Augustine accuses himself of wasting his time, by not having from the first sought Gop in this manner of prayer.

When we are thus fully introverted, and warmly penetrated throughout with a lively sense of the Divine Presence; when the senses are all recollected, and withdrawn from the circumference to the centre, and the soul is sweetly and silently employed on the truths we have read, not in reasoning, but in the feeding thereon, and animating the will by affection, rather than fatiguing the understanding by study; when, I say, the affections are in this state, which, however difficult it may appear at first, is, as I shall hereafter shew, easily attainable; we must allow them sweetly to repose, and peacefully to drink in that of which they have tasted: for as a person may enjoy the flavour of the finest viand in mastication, yet receive no nourishment therefrom, if he does not cease the action and swallow the food; so, when our affections are enkindled, if we endeayour to stir them up yet more, we extinguish the flame, and the soul is deprived of its nourishment : we should, therefore, in stillness and repose, with respect, confidence, and love. swallow the blessed food of which we have tasted: this mereneed with pauses vita the action, the silence vita the action, the silence is vita the action, the silence is vita exertion lessened;

The son's operations, they remain to hereafter explained.

Transed us, and we gradually remembered the feeling and taste soul into the second exceeding in the manner I have the indicate as the learned:

The indulged with it, even from

MAR. IV.

THE LUCY DEGREE OF PRAYER.

server of prayer, "The prayer of

Prayer of faith and stillness;"

naver of simplicity." I shall here

so being more just than any of the

nuch more exalted state of prayer than

enter some time exercised in the way

must that she is gradually enabled to

that recollection is attended with

that prayer becomes easy, sweet

that this is the true way of finding

some is as ointment poured forth."

necod must now be altered, and that

ever will with courage and fidelity, with
st the difficulties we may encounter

we will by faith places herself in "The becomes recollected before him, let

sense of the Divine Presence; let sense of the Divine Presence; let tut being troubled for a subject, and it abates, she may excite the will by and if by the first moving thereof, she in her sweet peace, let her there in must be gently fanned, but as we must cease that effort, lest we activity. I would warmly recom-

little time after in a respectful silence. It is also of the greatest importance, for the soul to go to prayer with courage; and such a pure and disinterested love, as seeks nothing from God, but the ability to please him, and to do his will: for a servant who only proportions his diligence to his hope of reward, renders himself unworthy of all reward. Go then to prayer, not that ye may enjoy spiritual delights, but that ye may be either full or empty, just as it pleaseth God: this will preserve you in an evenness of spirit, in desertion as well as in consolation, and prevent your being surprized at aridity or the apparent repulses of God.

CHAP. V.

OF SPIRITUAL ARIDITY.

THOUGH Gop hath no other desire than to impart himself to the loving soul that seeks him, yet he frequently conceals himself from her, that she may be roused from sloth, and impelled to seek him with fidelity and love. But with what abundant goodness doth he recompence the faithfulness of his beloved? And how sweetly are these apparent withdrawings of himself succeeded by the consoling caresses of love? At these seasons, we are apt to believe, either that it proves our fidelity, and evinces a greater ardour of affection, to seek him by an exertion of our own strength and activity: or that this exertion will induce him the more speedily to revisit us. No, no, my dear souls, believe me, this is not the right procedure in this degree of prayer; with patient love, with self abasement and humiliation, with the reiterated breathings of an ardent but peaceful affection, and with silence full of the most profound respect, you must wait the return of the Beloved: thus only you will demonstrate, that it is himself alone, and his good pleasure, that you seek: and not the selfish delights of your own sensations. Hence it is said, (Eccles. ii. 2. 3.) "Be not impatient in the time of "dryness and obscurity; suffer the suspensions and delays of "the consolations of Gop; cleave unto him, and wait upon "him patiently, that thy life may increase and be renewed."

Be ye, therefore, patient in prayer, though, during life, you can do nought else, than wait the return of the Beloved, in deep humiliation, calm contentment, and patient resignation to his will. And yet how this most excellent prayer may be intermingled with the sighings of plaintive love! This conduct indeed, is most pleasing to the heart of Jasus; and, above all others, will, as it were, compel him to return,

CHAP. VI.

F SRANDONMENT, OR RESIGNATION.

The now we should begin to abandon and give up our whole the strong and positive concaton, must one occurrence of every moment is agreeable to instrumentate will and permission, and just such as our state the conviction will make us resigned in all things; the receipt of all that happens, not as from the creature, but is from Gop himself.

But I conjure you, my dearly beloved, who sincerely wish a give up yourselves to God, that after you have made the constion, you will not snatch yourself back again: remember, a gitt once presented, is no longer at the disposal of the donor.

bandonment is a matter of the greatest importance in our rucess; it is the key to the inner court; so that whosoever snoweth truly how to abandon himself, soon becomes perfect: we must, therefore, continue stedfast and immoveable therein; pur listen to the voice of natural reason. Great faith produces great abandonment: we must confide in GoD, "hoping against hope." (Rom. iv. 18.)

Abandonment is the casting off all selfish care, that we may be altogether at the Divine Disposal. All Christians are exhorted to this resignation; for it is said to all, "Be not anxious for to-morrow; for your Heavenly Pather knoweth all that is necessary for you." (Matt xx. 25.) "In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall direct thy paths." (Prov. iii. 6.) "Commit thy ways unto the Lord, and thy thoughts shall be established." (Prov. xvi. 3.) "Commit thy ways unto the Lord, and he himself will bring it to pass." Psalm. xxxvi. 5.)

Our abandonment then should be as fully applied to external as internal things, giving up all our concerns into the hands of Gon, forgetting ourselves and thinking only of him; by which the heart will remain always disengaged, free, and as peace. It is practised by continually losing our own will in and will of Goo; by renouncing every particular inclination to soon as it arises, however good it may appear, that we may stand in indifference with respect to ourselves, and only will which God from eternity had willed; by being resigned in all tinings, whether for soul or body, whether for time or what is past in oblivion; what is to come Providence, and devoting the present moment to God, with itself Gon's eternal order, and is as infallible . Calabon to us of his will as it is inevitable and common www. by attributing nothing that befals us to the creature. we regarding all things in God, and looking upon all, exwas some sins, as infallibly proceeding from him. Surrender Surrender yourselves then to be led and disposed of just as Goo pleaseth, with respect both to your outward and inward state.

CHAP. VII.

OF SUFFERINGS.

BE ye patient under all the sufferings which God is pleased to send you: if your love to him be pure; you will not seek him less on Calvary, than on Tabor; and, surely, he should be as much loved on that as on this, since it was on Calvary, he made the greater display of his own love for you.

Be not like those, who give themselves to him at one season, and withdraw from him at another: they give themselves only to be caressed: and wrest themselves back again, when they come to be crucified, or at least turn for consolation to the creature.

No, beloved souls, ye will not find consolation in ought but in the love of the Cross, and in total abandonment; "Who savoureth not the Cross, savoureth not the things "that be of God." (Matt. xvi. 23.) It is impossible to love God without loving the Cross; and a heart that savours the Cross, finds the bitterest things to be sweet: "A famished "soul findeth herself an hungered for her God, in proportion as she findeth herself an hungered for the Cross. God giveth the Cross, and the Cross giveth us God.

We may be assured, that there is an internal advancement, where there is an advancement in the way of the Cross: Abandonment and the Cross go hand in hand together.

As soon as any thing presents itself, as a suffering, and you feel a repugnance against it, resign yourself immediately unto Gop with respect to it, and give yourself up to him in sacrifice; you shall find, that, when the Cross arrives, it will not be so very burthensome, because you had disposed yourself to a willing reception of it. This, however, does not prevent you from feeling its weight as some have imagined: for when we do not feel the Cross, we do not suffer it. A sensibility of sufferings constitutes a principal part of the sufferings themselves. Jesus Christ himself was willing to suffering tutmost rigours. We often bear the Cross in weakness, at other times in strength: all should be equal to us in the will of Gop.

CHAP. VIII.

OF MYSTERIES.

IT may be objected, that by this method, we shall have no mysteries imprinted on our minds: but it is quite the reverse; for it is the peculiar means of imparting them to t

Hence it is, that those, in whom the attractions of grace are very powerful, find the outward man altogether weak and feeble, and even liable to faintings. I do not mean, by this. to discourage mortification; for it should ever accompany prayer, according to the strength and state of the person, or as obedience will allow But I say, that mortification should not be our principal exercise; nor should we prescribe ourselves such and such austerities, but follow simply and merely the internal attractions of grace; and being possessed and occupied with the Divine presence (without thinking particularly on mortification) God will enable us to perform every species of it; and most assuredly, he will give no relaxation. to those who abide faithful in their abandonment to him. until he has mortified in them every thing that remains to be mortified. We have only then to continue stedfast in the utmost attention to Gop, and all things will be rightly performed. All are not capable of outward austerities, but all are capable of this. In the mortification of the eye and ear, which continually supply the busy imagination with new subjects, there is little danger of falling into excess; but God will teach us this also, and we have only to follow where his spirit guides.

The soul has a double advantage by proceeding thus: for, in withdrawing from outward objects, she draws the nearer to GoD; and in approaching him, besides the secret sustaining and preserving power and virtue she receives, she is farther removed from sin, the nearer her approaches are

made; so that conversing becomes habitual.

CHAP. XI.

OF CONVERSION.

"BE ye truly converted unto that God from whom ye have "so deeply revolted." (Isa. xxxi. 6.) To be truly converted is to avert wholly from the creature, and turn wholly unto Gob.

For the attainment of salvation, it is absolutely necessary, that we should forsake outward sin, and turn unto righteousness: but this alone is not perfect conversion, which consists in a total change of the whole man from an outward to an inward life.

When the soul is once turned to God, she finds a wonderful facility in continuing stedfast in her conversion; and the longer she remains thus converted, the nearer she approaches, and the more firmly she adheres to GoD; and the nearer she draws to him, of necessity she is the farther removed from the creature, which is so contrary to him: so that she is so effectually established and rooted in her conversion, that it

becomes

becomes habitual, and as it were natural to her. Now we must not suppose, that this is effected by a violent exertion of her own powers; for she is not capable of, nor should she attempt any other co-operation with Divine Grace, than that of endeavouring to withdraw herself, from external objects, and to turn inwards: after which she has nothing farther to do, than to continue stedfast in her adherence to Gop.

God has an attractive virtue which draws the soul more and more powerfully to himself, the nearer she approaches towards him, and in attracting, he purifies and refines her; just as it is with a gross vapour exhaled by the sun, which, as it gradually ascends, is rarified and rendered pure: the vapour indeed, contributes to its exhalation only by its passiveness; but the soul co-operates with the attractions of her God, by a free and affectionate correspondence. This kind of introversion is both easy and efficacious, advancing the soul naturally, and without constraint, because God himself is her centre.

Every centre has a powerful attractive virtue; and the more pure and exalted it is, the stronger and more irresistable are its attractions. But besides the potent magnetism of the centre itself, there is, in every creature, a correspondent tendency to re-union with its peculiar centre, which is vigorous and active in proportion to the spirituality and perfection

of the subject.

As soon as any thing is turned towards its centre, its own gravitation instigates and accelerates it thereto, unless it be withheld by some invincible obstacle: a stone held in the hand is no sooner disengaged, than by its own weight it falls to the earth as to its centre; so also water and fire, when unobstructed, tend and flow incessantly to their principle or centre. Now when the soul, by its efforts to abandon outward objects, and gather herself inwards, is brought into the influence of the central tendency; without any other exertion, she falls gradually by the weight of Divine Love, into her proper centre; and the more passive and tranquil she remains, and the freer from self-motion and self-exertion, the more rapidly she advances, because the energy of the central attractive virtue is un-obstructed, and has full liberty for action.

All our care and attention should, therefore, be to acquire inward recollection: nor let us be discouraged by the pains and difficulties we encounter in this exercise, which will soon be recompensed, on the part of our God, by such abundant supplies of grace, as will render the exercise perfectly easy, provided we be faithful in meekly withdrawing our hearts from outward distractions and occupations, and returning to our centre, with affections full of tenderness and serenity. When at any time the passions are turbulent, a gentle retreat inwards unto a present God, easily deadens and pacifies them; and any other way of contending with them, rather irritates than appeases them.

CHAP XII.

- I'M THEADY OF THE MERCE PRESENCE OF GOD.

- and adherence i er winde being; she now enjoys a and the cultural Presence, which is become as it were vie cess in unusual screnity gradually diffusing itself and ner racuities; and silence now wholly constitutes ... vuist God communicates an infused love, which remaining of neurable blessedness. O that I were workship rogression of subsequent states! But I now beginners; and shall, therefore, proceed no LORD's time for publishing what may paradic o every conceivable degree of " stature in

but however, urge it as a matter of the highest trom self-action and self-exertion, that God way let alone: he saith by the mouth of his Prophet 'so.u, 'Se still and know that I am God." (Ps. xlvi, 10.) is so infatuated with a love and attachment working, that it doth not perceive and distinguish She is ignorant that her inability minutely was in manner of her motion, is occasioned by the incr progress; and that the operations of God, and diffusing their influence, absorb those of The stars may be seen distinctly before the sun his light advances, their rays are gradually his; and they become invisible, not from the hef luminary.

is similar here; for there is a strong and universal which absorbs all the little distinct lights of the soul: we show faint and disappear under its powerful influence, ... wit-wivity is now no longer distinguishable: yet those who accuse this prayer of idleness, a charge that in the would but make towards the attainment of this prayer, they would which the contrary of what they suppose, and find

્રવસ્તાભા groundless.

requirement of inaction is, indeed, not the consequence want, but of fruitfulness and abundance; who was be clearly perceived by the experienced soul, who that her silence is full and unctuous, and was a caused totally the reverse of apathy and barrenhave no two kinds of people that keep silence; the ... have have nothing to say, the other because they it is we with the soul in this state; her silence is occasioned by the super-abundance of matter, too great for utterance.

To be drowned, and to die of thirst, are deaths widely different; yet water may, in some sense, be said to cause both; abundance destroys in one case, and want in the other. So in this state the abundance and overflowing of grace still the activity of self; and therefore, it is of the utmost importance to remain as silent as possible.

The infant hanging at the mother's breast, is a lively illustration of our subject: it begins to draw the milk by moving its little lips; but when the milk flows abundantly, it is content to swallow, and suspend its suction; by doing otherwise, it would only hurt itself, spill the milk, and be

obliged to quit the breast.

We must act in like manner in the beginning of Prayer, by exerting the lip of the affections; but as soon as the milk of Divine Grace flows freely, we have nothing to do, but, in repose and stillness, sweetly to imbibe it; and when it ceases to flow, we must again stir up the affections as the infant moves its lips. Whoever acts otherwise, cannot turn this grace to advantage; which is bestowed, to allure and draw the soul into the repose of Love, and not into the multiplicity of Self.

But what becometh of this child, who gently and without motion drinketh in the milk ¹ Who could believe that it can thus receive nourishment? Yet the more peacefully it feeds, the better it thrives. What, I say, becomes of this infant? It drops gently asleep on its mother's bosom. So the soul that is tranquil and peaceful in prayer, sinketh frequently into a mystic slumber, wherein all her powers are at rest; till at length she is wholly fitted for that state, of which she enjoys these transient anticipations. In this process the soul is led naturally, without effort, art or study.

The interior is not a strong hold, to be taken by storm and violence; but a kingdom of peace, which is to be gained only

by Love.

If any will thus pursue the little path I have pointed out, it will lead them to infused prayer. Gop demands nothing extraordinary nor difficult; on the contrary, he is best pleased

by a simple and child-like conduct.

That which is most sublime and elevated in religion, is the easiest attained: the most necessary sacraments are the least difficult. It is thus also in natural things: if you would go to sea, embark on a river, and you will be conveyed to it insensibly and without exertion. Would you go to God, follow this sweet and simple path, and you will arrive at the desired object, with an ease and expedition that will amaze you. O that you would but once make the trial! how soon would you find that all! have advanced falls short of the reality, and that your own experience will carry you infinitely beyond it! Is it fear that prevents you from instantly casting your-

self into those arms of Lova, which were widely extended on the Cross only to receive you? Whence can your fears arise? What fisque do you run, in depending solely on your God, and abandoning yourself wholly unto him? Ah! he will not deceive you, unless by bestewing an abundance beyond your highest hopes: but those who expect all from themselves, will inevitably be deceived, and must suffer this rebuke of God by his prophet Isaiah, "Ye have wearied yourselves in "the multiplicity of your ways, and have not said, let us rest "in peace." (Isa. lvii. 16. vulgate.)

CHAP. XIII.

OF REST BEFORE GOD.

THE soul advanced thus far, hath no need of any other preparative than its quietude: for now the Presence of God, which is the great effect, or rather continuation of Prayer, begins to be infused, and almost without intermission. The soul certainly enjoys transcendent blessedness, and feels that "it is no longer she that lives, but CHRIST that liveth in "her;" and that the only way to find him is introversion. She no sooner closeth her bodily eyes than she is wrapt up in Prayer: she is amazed at so great a blessing, and enjoys an internal converse, which external matters cannot interrupt. The same may be said of this species of prayer, that is said of wisdom: "all good things come together with her." (Wisdom vii. 11.) For the virtues flow from this soul into exertion with so much sweetness and facility, that they appear natural and spontaneous: and the living spring within breaks forth so freely and abundantly into all goodness, that she becomes even insensible to evil. Let her then remain faithful in this state; and be aware of choosing or seeking any other disposition whatsoever than this simple Rest. as a preparative either to confession or communion, to action or prayer: for her sole business is to expand herself for the full reception of the Divine infusions. I would not be understood to speak of the preparations necessary for the sacraments, but of the most perfect dispositions in which they can be received.

CHAP. XIV.

OF INTERNAL SILENCE.

"THE Lord is in his Holy Temple, let all the earth keep "silence before him." (Hab. ii. 20.) Inward silence is absolutely indispensible, because The Word is essential and eternal, and necessarily requires dispositions in the soul in some degree correspondent to his nature, as a capacity for the reception of himself. Hearing is a sense formed to receive sounds, and is rather passive than active, admitting, but

not communicating sensation; and if we would hear, we must lend the ear for that purpose : so CHRIST THE ETERNAL WORD, without whose Divine inspeaking the soul is dead, dark and barren, when he would speak within us, requires the most silent attention to his all-quickening and efficacious

Hence it is so frequently enjoined us in Sacred Writ, to hear and be attentive to the voice of Gop: of the numerous exhortations to this effect, I shall quote a few : " Hearken " unto me, my people, and give ear unto me, O my nation !" " (Isa. li. 4.) and again, " Hear me, all ye whom I carry in "my bosom, and bear within my bowels:" (Isa. xlvi. 3.) and farther by the Psalmist, " Hearken, O daughter! and " consider, and incline thine ear; forget also thine own people, " and thy father's house; so shall the King greatly desire thy

" beauty." (Psal, xlv. 10, 11.)

We should forget ourselves, and all self-interest, and listen and be attentive to the voice of our Gop : and these two simple actions, or rather passive dispositions, attract his love to that beauty, which he himself communicates. Outward silence is very requisite for the cultivation and improvement of inward; and, indeed, it is impossible we should become truly internal, without the love and practice of outward silence and retirement. Gop saith, by the mouth of his prophet, " I will lead her into solitude, and there will I speak to her heart:" (Hos. ii. 14. vulg.) and unquestionably the being internally engaged with Gop, is wholly incompatable with being busied, and employed in the numerous trifles that surround us. (Luke x. 41-2.)

When through imbecility or unfaithfulness we become dissipated, or as it were un-centered, it is of immediate importance to turn again gently and sweetly inward; and thus we may learn to preserve the spirit and unction of prayer, throughout the day; for if prayer and recollection where wholly confined to any appointed half-hour, or hour, we should reap but little

fruit.

CHAP, XV.

OF CONFESSION AND SELF-EXAMINATION.

SELF-EXAMINATION should always precede confession, and in the nature and manner of it should be conformable to the state of the soul: the business of those that are advanced to the degree of which we now treat, is to lay their whole souls open before God, who will not fail to enlighten them, and enable them to see the peculiar nature of their faults. This examination, however, should be peaceful and tranquil; and we should depend on GoD for the discovery and knowledge of our sins, rather than on the diligence of our own scrutiny.

When we examine with constraint, and in the strength of

run own enaments, we are easily decrived and betrayed by sem-care into error; we critical the evil good, and the good esta. (324, v. 301) our when we he in full exposure become are sum or highteenness, his Divine beams render the sounces, atoms visione, it follows from hence, that we must breake sem and accommon our souls to God, as well in examination as consession.

When some nave attained to this species of prayer, no fault response presentation; on every commission, they are instantly recursed by an inward burning and tender confusion! such is the scruddy of him who suffers no evil to be concealed; and make to parisying influence, the only way is to turn affectionated to the make and the bear will speckness the pain and corrections as addicts. He becomes the incessant examiner of the state, the now indeed no longer examine herself; and if the resignation, experience will convince by make sale is a thousand times more effectually examined to the Drune Light, than by her most active and vigorous larger than.

* I have whe treed these paths should be informed of a makes respecting their confession, in which they are apt to car. When they begin to give an account of their sins, inwas us the regret and contrition they had been accustomed to 'ney ned that love and tranquillity sweetly pervade and viscosion of their souls: now those who are not properly and desirous of withdrawing from this sensation, to in an act of contrition; because they have heard, and with that it is requisite: but they are not aware, that they we hereby the genuine contrition, which is this Infused immitely surpassing any effect produced by self-exertion, www.comprehending the other acts in itself as in one principal a much higher perfection, than if they were distinctly in their sensation. Be not then trouwhen God acts so excellently in you wid we vou.

to have sin in this manner, is to hate it as God does. The work is that which is of his immediate operation in the way should she then be so eager for action? Let her want in the state he assigns it, agreeably to the instructions where it is Put your confidence in God; remain in quiet he hath placed you." (Eccles. xi. 22.)

in will also be amazed at finding a difficulty in calling with the remembrance: this, however, should cause no maintain with because this forgetfulness of our faults is there is cur purification from them; and in this degree and in this degree is in the will not fail to make known to us our greatest faults;

by Though the measurement relates immediately to the customs of the Roman time of th

faults; for then he himself examines; and the soul will feel the end of examination more perfectly accomplished, than it could possibly have been by the utmost exertion of our own endeavours.

These instructions, however, would be altogether unsuitable to the preceding degrees, while the soul continues in her active state; wherein it is right and necessary she should in all things use her utmost industry, in proportion to the degree of her advancement. It is those who have arrived at this more advanced state, whom I would exhort to follow these instructions, and not to vary their own simple occupation even on approaching the communion; they should remain in silence, and suffer God to act freely and without limitation. Who can better receive the Body and Blood of Christ, than he in whom the Holy Spirit is in-dwelling?

CHAP. XVI.

OF READING AND VOCAL PRAYER.

IF, while reading, you feel yourself recollected, lay aside the book, and remain in stillness: at all times read but little, and cease to read when you are thus internally attracted.

The soul that is called to a state of inward silence, should not encumber herself with long vocal prayers: whenever she does pray vocally, and finds a difficulty therein, and an attraction to silence, she should not use constraint by persevering, but yield to the internal drawings, unless the repeating such prayers be a matter of obedience. In any other case, it is much better not to be burdened with and tied down to the repetition of set forms, but wholly given up to the leadings of the HOLY SPIRIT; and herein, indeed, is every species of devotion inclusively fulfilled in a most eminent degree.

CHAP. XVII.

OF PETITIONS.

THE soul should not be surprised, at feeling herself unable to offer up to God such petitions, as she had formerly made with freedom and facility; for now "the Spirit maketh "intercession for her according to the will of God, that Spirit "which helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we "should pray for as we ought; but the Spirit itself maketh "intercession for us, with groanings which cannot be uttered." (Rom. viii. 26.) We must co-operate with, and second the designs of God, which tend to divest us of all our own operations, that in the place thereof his own may be instituted. Let this then be done in you; and suffer not yourself to be attached to any thing, however good it may appear; for it is no longer

longer good, if it in any measure turns you aside from that which God willeth of you: the Divine Will is preferable to all things else. Shake off then all attachment to the interests of Self, and live on faith and resignation; here it is that genuine faith begins truly to operate.

CHAP. XVIII.

OF DEFECTS, OR INFIRMITIES.

SHOULD we either wander among externals, or sink into dissipation, or commit a fault, we must instantly turn inwards; for having departed thereby from our God, we should as soon as possible return unto him, and suffer in his presence, whatever sensations he is pleased to impress. On the commission of a fault, it is of great importance to guard against vexation and disquietude, which springs from a secret root of pride, and a love of our own excellence; we are hurt by feeling what we are: and if we discourage ourselves or despond, we are the more enfeebled; and from our reflections on the fault a chagrin arises, which is often worse than the fault itself.

The truly humble soul is not surprised at her defects or failings; and the more miserable and wretched she beholds herself, the more doth she abandon herself unto God, and press for a nearer and more intimate alliance with him, that she may avail herself of an eternal strength. We should the rather be induced to act thus, as God himself hath said, "I will make "thee understand what thou oughtest to do; I will teach thee "the way by which thou shouldest go; and I will have "mine eye continually upon thee for a guide." (Psal. xxxii. 8. vulg.)

CHAP. XIX.

OF DISTRACTIONS AND TEMPTATIONS.

A DIRECT contest and struggle with distractions and temptations, rather serves to augment them; and withdraws the soul from that adherence to God, which should ever be her principal occupation. The surest and safest method of conquest, is simply to turn away from the evil, and draw yet nearer and eloser to our God: a little child, on perceiving a monster, does not wait to fight with it, and will scarcely turn its eyes toward it; but quickly shrinks into the bosom of its mother, in total confidence of safety: so likewise should the soul turn from the dangers of temptation to her God. "God is in the midst of her," saith the Psalmist, "she shall not be moved; God shall help her, and that right early." (Psal. xlvi. v.)

If we do otherwise, and in our weakness attempt to attack our enemies, we shall frequently feel ourselves wounded if not totally totally defeated: but, by casting ourselves into the simple presence of God, we shall find instant supplies of strength for our support. This was the succour sought for by David: "I "have set," saith he, "the Lord always before me; because "he is at my right hand, I shall not be moved. Therefore my heart is glad and my glory rejoiceth: my flesh also shall "rest in hope." (Psal. xvi. 8, 9.) And it is said in Exodus, "The Lord shall fight for you, and ye shall hold your peace."

CHAP. XX.

OF THE PRAYER OF SELF-ANNIHILATION.

SUPPLICATION and Sacrifice are comprehended in prayer, which according to St. John, is "an incense, the smoke "whereof ascendeth unto God;" therefore it is said in the Apocalypse, that "unto the Angel was given much incense, "that he should offer it with the prayers of all Saints."

(Chap, viii, 3.)

Prayer is the effusion of the heart in the presence of God:
"I have poured out my soul before God," saith the mother of Samuel. (I Sam. i. 15.) The prayer of the Wise men at the feet of Christ in the stable of Bethlehem, was signified by the incense they offered: for prayer being the energy and fire of Love, melting, dissolving, and sublimating the soul, and causing it to ascend unto God; therefore as the soul is melted and dissolved, in like proportion do odours issue from it; and these odours proceed from the intense fire of Love within.

This is illustrated in the Canticles (i. 11.) where the Spouse saith, "While the king sitteth on his couch, my spikenard "sendeth forth the smell thereof." The couch is the ground or centre of the soul; and when God is there, and we know how to dwell with him, and abide in his Presence, the sacred power and influence thereof gradually dissolves the obduration of the soul, and, as it melteth, odours issue forth; hence it is that the Beloved saith of his spouse, in seeing her soul melt when he spake, "Who is this that cometh out of the wilderness, "like pillars of smoke perfumed with myrrh and frank-"incense?" (Cant. v. 6....and iii. 6.)

Thus doth the soul ascend unto God, by giving up Self to the destroying and annihilating power of Divine Love: this, indeed, is a most essential and necessary sacrifice in the Christian religion, and that alone by which we pay true homage to the sovereignty of God; as it is written, "The power of the "Lord is great, and he is honoured only by the humble." (Eccles. iii. 20.) By the destruction of the existence of Self-hood within us, we truly acknowledge the supreme existence of our God; for unless we cease to exist in Self, the Spirit of The Eternal Word cannot exist in us: now it is by the giving

giving up of our own life, that we give place for his coming; and, "in dying to ourselves, he himself liveth and abideth in us."

We should, indeed, surrender our whole being unto Christ Jusus; and cease to live any longer in ourselves, that he himself may become our life; "that being dead, our life may be "hid with Christ in God." (Col. iii. 3.) "Pass ye into me," saith God, "all ye who extrestly seek after me." (Eccles. xxiv. 16.) But how is it we pass into God? We leave and forsake ourselves, that we may be lost in him; and this can be effected only by annihilation, which being the true prayer of adoration, renders unto God alone, all "Riessing, honour, "glory and power, for ever and ever." (Rev. v. 13.)

This is the Prayer of Truth; "It is worshipping Gon in spirit and truth:" (John iv. 23.) "In spirit," because we enter into the purity of that Spirit which prayeth within us, and are drawn forth and freed from our own carnal and corrupt manner of praying; "In truth," because we are thereby placed in the Truth of The All of Gon, and The Nothing of the creature.

There are but these two truths, THE ALL, and THE NOTHING; every thing else is falsehood. We can pay due honor to the ALL or God, only in our own annihilation; which is no sooner accomplished, than he who never suffers a void in nature, instantly fills us with himself.

Did we but know the virtues and the blessings which the soul derives from this prayer, we should willingly be employed therein without ceasing. "It is the pearl of great price; it "is the hidden treasure," (Matt. xiii. 44,45) which, whoever findeth, selleth freely all he hath to purchase it: It is the "well of living water, which springeth up into everlasting "life:" It is the adoration of Gop "in spirit and in truth:" (John iv. 14... 23.) and it is the full performance of the purest evangelical precepts.

JESUS CHRIST assureth us, that the "Kingdom of God is "within us" (Luke xvii. 21) and this is true in two senses the First God becometh so fully the Master and Lord in us, that nothing resisteth his dominion; then is our interior his kingdom: And again, when we possess God, who is the supreme Good, we possess his kingdom also, wherein there is fullness of joy, and where we attain the end of our creation: thus it is said, "to serve God, is to reign." The end of our creation, indeed, is to enjoy our God, even in this life; but alas! how few there are who advert to this!

CHAP. XXI.

THAT WE ACT MORE NOBLY, AND WITH MORE ENERGY, BY
THIS SPECIES OF PRAYER, THAN BY ANY OTHER.

COME persons, when they hear of the prayer of silence. falsely imagine that the soul remains stupid, dead and inactive; but, unquestionable, it acteth therein, more nobly and more extensively than it had ever done before; for God himself is her mover, and she now acteth by the agency of his Spirit. When St. Paul speaks of our being led by THE SPI-RIT OF GOD, it is not meant that we should cease from action: but that we should act through the internal agency of his Grace. This is finely represented by the Prophet Ezekiel's vision of the "wheels, which had a Living Spirit; and wither-"soever the Spirit was to go, they went; they ascended, and "descended as they were moved; for the Spirit of Life was in "them and they returned not when they went." (Ezek. i. chap. 18. verse.) Thus the soul should be equally subservient to the will of that Vivifying Spirit wherewith she is informed, and scrupulously faithful to follow only as that moves. Her motions now never tend to return, in reflection on the creatures or herself; but to go forward, in an incessant approach toward her chief end.

This action of the soul is attended with the utmost tranquillity. When she acteth of herself the act is forced and constrained; and, therefore, she can the more easily perceive and distinguish it: but when she acteth under the influence of the Spirit of Grace, her action is so free, so easy, and so natural, that it almost seems as if she did not act at all: "He hath set me at large, he hath delivered me, because he de- lighted in me." (Psal. xviii. 19.)

When the soul hath got into her central tendency, or in other words, is returned through recollection into herself; from that moment the central attraction becomes a most potent action, infinitely surpassing in its energy every other species. Nothing, indeed, can equal the swiftness of this tendency to the centre: and tho an action, yet it is so noble, so peaceful, so full of tranquillity, so natural, and so spontaneous, that it appears to the soul as if she did not act at all.

When a wheel rolls slowly, we can easily distinguish its parts; but when its motion is rapid, we can distinguish nothing. So the Soul which rests in God, hath an activity exceedingly noble and elevated, yet altogether peaceful: and the more peaceful she is, the swifter is her course; because she is proportionably given up to that Spirit, by which she is moved and directed.

This attracting Spirit is no other than God himself, who, in drawing us, causes us to run unto him. How well did the

Spouse understand this, when she said, "Draw me and we will "run after thee." (Cant. i. 3.) Draw me unto thee, O my Divine centre, by the secret springs of my existence, and all my powers and senses shall follow the potent magnetisms! This simple attraction is both an ointment to heal, and a perfume to allure: "we follow," saith she, "the fragrance of "thy perfumes;" and though so powerfully magnetic it is followed by the soul freely, and without constraint; for it is equally delightful as forcible; and whilst it attracts by its potency, it charms with its sweetness. "Draw me," said the Spouse, "and we will run after thee." She speaketh of and to herself: "draw me,...behold the unity of the centre which attracteth! "we will run,"—behold the correspondence and course of all the senses and powers, in following that attraction!

Instead then of promoting idleness, we promote the highest activity, by inculcating a total dependence on the Spirit of God, as our moving principle; for it is " in him, and by him " alone, that we live and move, and have our being." (Acts xvii. 18.) This meek dependence on the Spirit of Gop is indispensibly necessary, to reinstate the soul in its primeval unity and simplicity, that she may thereby attain the end of her ere-We must, therefore, forsake our multifarious activity. to re-enter the simplicity and unity of Gop, in whose image we were originally formed. "The Spirit is one and mani-" fold," (Wisdom vii. 22.) and his unity doth not preclude his multiplicity. We enter into his unity when we are united unto his Spirit, and have one and the same Spirit with him; and we are multiplied in respect to the outward execution of his will without any egression from our state of union: so that, when we are wholly moved by the Divine Spirit, which is infinitely active, our activity, must indeed, differ widely in its energy and degree from that which is merely our own.

We must yield ourselves to the guidance of "Wisdom. "which is more moving than motion;" (Wisdom vii. 24.) and by abiding in dependence on its action our activity will be truly efficient. "All things were made by THE WORD, and "without him was not any thing made, that was made." (John i. 3.) God originally formed us in his own likeness; and he now informeth us with the spirit of his Word, that. "Breath of Life," (Gen. ii. 7.) which was inbreathed at our creation, in the participation whereof the Image of God consisted: and this life is a Life of Unity, simple, pure, intimate, and always fruitful. The Devil having broken and deformed the Divine Image in the soul, the agency of the same WORD, whose Spirit was inbreathed at our creation, is absolutely necessary for its renovation; and it can only be renewed by our being passive under him who is to renew it: but who can restore the Image of Goo within us in its primeval form. save he himself who is "the Essential Image of his Father?"

Our activity should, therefore consist, in endeavouring to acquire and maintain such a state, as may be most susceptible of Divine impressions, most flexile to all the operations of the ETERNAL WORD. Whilst a tablet is unsteady, the painter is unable to delineate a true copy: so every act of our own selfish and proper spirit is productive of false and erroneous lineaments; it interrupts the work, and defeats the design of this adorable painter: we must then remain in peace, and move only when he moves us. "Jesus Christ hath The Life in himself," (John v. 26.) and he should be the life of every

living thing.

As all action is estimable only in proportion to the dignity of the efficient principle, this action is incontestibly more noble than any other. Actions produced by a Divine principle, are Divine; but creaturely actions, however good they appear, are only human, or at best virtuous, even when accompanied by Grace. JESUS CHRIST saith, "he hath The Life in himself:" All other beings have only a borrowed life; but THE WORD hath The Life in himself; and being communicative of his nature, he desireth to communicate it to man. We should, therefore, make room for the influx of this Life, which can only be done by the ejection of the Adamical life, the suppression of the activity of Self. This is agreeable to the assertion of St. Paul: "If any man be in CHRIST, he is a new creature: old " things are passed away; behold all things are become new!" (2 Corin. v. 17.) but this state can be accomplished only by dving to ourselves, and to all our own activity, that the activity of God may be substituted in its stead.

Instead, therefore, of prohibiting activity, we enjoin it; but in absolute dependence on the Spirit of God, that his activity may take place of our own. This can only be effected by the concurrence of the creature; and this concurrence can only be yielded by moderating and restraining our own activity, that the activity of God may gradually gain the ascendancy, and finally absorb all that is ours, as distinguishable from it.

JESUS CHRIST hath exemplified this in the Gospel: Martha did what was right; but because she did it in her own spirit, Christ rebuked her. The spirit of man is restless and turbulent; for which reason it does little, though it would appear to do much. "Martha," saith Christ, "Thou art careful, and troubled about many things; but one thing is needful; and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her." (Luke x. 41, 42.) And what was it that Mary had chosen? Repose, tranquillity, and peace. She apparently ceased to act, that the Spirit of Christ might act in her; she ceased to live, that Christ might be her life. This shows us how necessary it is to renounce ourselves, and all our activity, to follow Christ Jesus; and we cannot follow him, without being animated with his Spirit. Now that his Spirit might gain admission in us, it is necessary, that our

own proper spirit should be first expelled: "He that is joined unto the LORD," saith St. Paul, "is one Spirit with him:" (1 Cor. vi. 17.) and David said, "It was good for him to draw near unto the LORD, and to put his strength in him:" (Ps. laxiii. 28.) this drawing near unto God is the beginning of Union.

Divine Union has its commencement, its progression, and its consummation. It is first an inclination and tendency towards God: when the soul is introverted in the manner before described, it gets within the influence of the central attraction, and acquires an eager desire after an Union: on a nearer approach unto God, it adheres to him; and growing stronger and stronger in its adhesion, it finally becomes one; that is, of one spirit with him; and it is thus the spirit which had wandered and strayed from God, returns again into its proper source.

Into this process, which is the Divine motion, and the Spirit of Jesus Christ, we must necessarily enter. St. Paul saith, If any man hath not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his:" (Rom. viii. 9.) therefore to be Christ's, we must be filled with his Spirit; and to be filled with his Spirit, we must be emptied of our own. The Apostle, in the same passage, proves the necessity of this Divine influence or motion: As many, "saith he, "as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God." (Rom. vii. 14.) The Spirit of Divine Filiation is then the Spirit of Divine action or motion: he, therefore adds, "Ye have not received the Spirit of bon-"dage again to fear; but ye have received the Spirit of Adoption whereby ye cry, Abba, Father."

This Spirit is no other than the Spirit of Christ, through which we participate of his Filiation; "And this Spirit bear"eth witness with our Spirit, that we are the children of God." (Rom. viii. 16.) When the soul yields herself to the influence and motions of this Blessed Spirit, she feels the testimony of her Divine Filiation; and she feels also, with superadded joy, that she hath received not the Spirit of bondage, but of Liberty, even "the Liberty of the children of God." She then finds that she acteth freely and sweetly, though with

vigour and infallibity.

The Spirit of Divine action is so necessary in all things, that St. Paul, in the same passage, foundeth that necessity on our ignorance with respect to what we pray for: "The Spirit," saith he, "also helpeth our infirmities; for we know not what "we should pray for as we ought; but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us, with groanings which cannot be uttered." This is positive: if we know not what we stand in need of, nor pray as we ought to do, for those things which are necessary; and if the Spirit which is in us, and to which we resign ourselves, asks and intercedes for us, should we not give unlimited freedom to its action, to its ineffable groanings

groanings in our behalf? This Spirit is the Spirit of the Word, which is always heard, as he saith himself: "I know that thou hearest me always;" (John xi. 42.) and if we freely admit this Spirit to pray and intercede for us, we also shall be always heard. The reason of this is given us by the same. Apostle, that skilful mystic, and master of the Internal life, where he adds, "He that searcheth the heart, knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit; because he maketh intercession for the saints, according to the will of God: "(Rom. viii. 27.) That is to say, the Spirit demandeth only that which is conformable to the will of God; and the will of God is that we should be saved; that we should become perfect: he therefore intercedeth for that which is necessary for so great an end.

Why should we then burthen ourselves with superfluous cares, and fatigue and weary ourselves in the multiplicity of our ways, "Let us rest in peace?" God himself inviteth us to cast our cares, our anxieties, upon him; and he complains in Isaiah, with ineffable goodness, that the soul had expended its powers and its treasures on a thousand external objects, and mistook its path to happiness, which was attainable by means much more facile: "Wherefore," saith God, "do you spend "money for that which is not bread? and your labour for that which satisfieth not? Hearken diligently unto me, and eat ye that which is good, and let your soul delight it—self in fatness:" (Isa. lv. 2.)

Did we but know the blessedness of thus hearkening unto God, and how greatly the soul is strengthened and invigorated thereby, "All flesh would surely be silent before the Lord;" (Zech. ii. 13) all would cease and be still, as soon as he appeareth. But to engage us further in a boundless resignation, God assures us, by the same Prophet, that we should fear nothing in this abandonment, because he takes a care of us, surpassing the highest tenderness of which we can form an ideas "Can a woman" saith he, "forget her sucking child, that "she should not have compassion on the son of her womb? "Yea, she may forget; yet will I not forget thee." (Isa. xlix. 15.) O blessed assurance, pregnant with consolation! Whe after this, shall be fearful of resigning themselves wholly to the dispensations and guidance of their God?

CHAP. XXII.

OF INTERNAL ACTS.

ACTS are distinguished into External and Internal. External are those, which bear relation to some sensible object, and are either morally good or evil, merely according to the nature of the principle, from which they proceed. I intend here to speak only of internal acts, those energies of the soul

by which she turns internally to some object, and averts from others.

If during my application to God, I should form a will to change the nature of my act, I thereby withdraw myself from God and turn to created objects, and that in a greater or less: degree according to the strength of the act: and if, when I am turned towards the creature, I would return to Gop. I must necessarily form an act for that purpose; and the more perfect this act is the more complete is the conversion. Till conversion is perfected many re-iterated acts are necessary; for it is generally progressive, though with some it is almost instantaneous. My act, however, should consist in a continual turning unto GoD, an exertion of every faculty and power of the soul purely for him, agreeably to the instructions of the son of Sirach: "Re-unite all the motions of thy heart in the holi-" ness of Goo' (vulgate) and to the example of David, " I will keep my whole strength for thee," (Psal. lviii. 10. vulg.) which is done by earnestly re-entering into one's self; as Isaiah saith, "Return to your heart," (Isa. xlvi 8. vulg.) for we have strayed from our heart by sin and it is our heart only that God requires: " my son give me thine heart, and er let thine eye observe my ways." (Prov. xxiii. 26.) To give the heart to God, is to have the whole eternal energy of the soul ever centering in him, that we may be rendered conformable to his will, We must therefore continue invariably turned to Goo, from our first application to him.

But the soul being weak and unstable, and accustomed to turn to external objects, she is consequently prone to dissipation. This evil, however, will be counteracted if, on perceiving her aberration, she, by a pure act of return to God, instantly replaces herself in him; and this act subsists as long as the conversion lasteth, by the powerful influence of a simple and unfeigned return to God, and as many reiterated acts form a habit, the soul contracts the habit of conversion; and that act which was before interrupted and distinct becomes continual.

The soul should not then be perplexed about forming an act which already subsists, and which, indeed, it cannot attempt to form without difficulty and constraint: she even finds that she is withdrawn from her proper state, under pretence of seeking that which is in reality acquired, seeing the habit is already formed, and she is confirmed in habitual conversion and habitual love. It is seeking one act by the help of many, and instead of continuing attached to God by one simple act alone.

We may remark, that at times, we form with facility many distinct yet simple acts; which shows that we have wandered, and that we re-enter our heart after having strayed from it; yet when we have re-entered, we should remain there in peace. We err, therefore, in supposing that we do not form acts; we form them continually; but they should

be in their nature conformable to the degree of our spiritual advancement.

The greatest difficulty with most spiritual people, arises from their not clearly comprehending this matter. Now some acts are transient and distinct, others are continual; and again, some are direct, and others reflex. All cannot form the first, neither are all in a state suited to form the last. The first are adapted to those who have strayed, and who require a distinguishable exertion, proportioned to the degree of their deviation, which, if inconsiderable, an act of the most simple kind is sufficient.

By the continued act, I mean that whereby the soul is altogether turned toward God in a direct tendency, which always subsists, and which it doth not renew unless it has been interrupted. The soul being thus turned, is "in the Love." and abides therein; "and he that dwelleth in Love dwelleth in God." (1 John iv. 16.) The soul then, as it were, existeth and reposeth in this habitual act, but free from sloth or torpitude; for still there is an uninterrupted act subsisting, which is a sweet sinking into the Deity, whose attraction becomes more and more powerful: and in following this potent attraction the soul presses farther, and sinks continually deeper into the ocean of Divine Love, maintaining an activity infinitely more powerful, vigorous and effectual, than that which served to accomplish her first return.

Now the soul that is thus profoundly and vigorously active, being wholly given up to God, doth not perceive her activity, because it is direct and not reflex: and this is the cause why some, who do not express themselves properly, say, that they do not act at all; but it is a mistake, for they were never more truly or nobly active: they should rather say, that they did not distinguish their acts, than that they did not act. I allow they do not act of themselves; but they are drawn, and they follow the attraction. Love is the weight which sinks them into God, as into an infinite sea, wherein they descend with inconceivable rapidity from one profound depth to another.

It is then an impropriety to say, that we do not form acts: all form acts, but the manner of their formation is not alike in all The cause of the mistake is this,; all who know they should. act, are desirous of acting, distinguishably and perceptibly; but this cannot be; distinct and sensible acts are for beginners, and acts of a higher nature for those in a more advanced state. To stop in the former, which are weak and of little profit, is to debar one's self of the latter; and again to attempt the latter without having passed through the former, is a no less considerable error.

All things should then be done in their season: every state has its commencement, its progress and its consummation; and it is an unhappy error to stop in the beginning. There is

come me are but whatehas its process; and at first we must labour with diligence and toil, but at last we shall reap the harvest of our industry. When the vessel is in port, the mariners are obliged to exert all their strength that they may clear has thence, and put to sea; but at length they turn her with facility as they please. In like manner while the soul remains in sin and creaturely entanglements, very frequent and streruous endeavours, are requisite to effect her freedom; the cords which withhold her must be loosed; and then by strong and vigorous efforts she gathers herself inwards, pushing off gradually from her old port; and, in leaving that at a distance, she proceeds to the interior, the haven to which she wishes to steer.

When the vessel is thus turned, in proportion as she advances on the sea, she leaves the land behind: and the farther she departs from the old harbour, the less difficulty and labour is requisite in moving her forward; at length she begins to get sweetly under sail; and now proceeds so swiftly in her course, that the oar which is become useless is laid aside. How is the Pilot now employed? He is content with spreading the sails, and holding the rudder. To spread the sails, is to lay one's self before God in the prayer of simple exposition, that we may be acted upon by his Spirit: to hold the rudder, is to restrain our hearts from wandering from the true course, recalling it gently, and guiding it steadily to the dictates of the Blessed Spirit, which gradually gain possession and dominion of the heart, just as the wind by degrees fills the sails and impels the vessel. While the winds are fair, the Pilot and the mariners rest from their labours, and the vessel glides rapidly along without their toil; and when they thus repose, and leave the vessel to the wind, they make more way in one hour, than they had done in a length of time by all their former efforts: were they even now to attempt using the oar, they would not only fatigue themselves, but retard the vessel by their ill-timed labours.

This is the manner of acting we should pursue interiorly; it will, indeed, advance us in a very short time, by the Divine impulsion, infinitely farther than a whole life spent in reiterated acts of self-exertion; and whosoever will take this path

will find it easier than any other.

If the wind be contrary and blows a storm, we must case anchor to withhold the vessel: our anchor is a firm confidence and hope in God, waiting patiently the calming of the tempest and the return of a more favourable gale, as David "Waited patiently for the Lord, and he inclined unto him, and heard his cry." (Psalm xl. 1.) We must, therefore, be resigned to the Spirit of God, giving up ourselves wholly, to his divine guidance.

CHAP. XXIII.

AN ADMONITION TO PASTORS AND TEACHERS.

TF all who laboured for the conversion of others, were to introduce them immediately into Prayer and the Interior Life, and make it their main design to gain and win over the heart, numberless as well as permanent conversions would certainly ensue. On the contrary, few and transient fruits must attend that labour which is confined to outward matters; such as burdening the disciple with a thousand precepts for external exercises, instead of leaving the soul to Christ by the occupation of the heart in him.

If ministers were sollicitous thus to instruct their parishioners, shepherds, while they watched their flocks, might have the Spirit of the primitive Christians, and the husbandman at the plough maintain a blessed intercourse with his Goo; the manufacturer, while he exhausts his outward man with labour, would be renewed in internal strength: and every species of vice would shortly disappear, and every parishioner become a

true follower of the Good Shepherd.

O when once the heart is gained, how easily is all moral evil corrected! It is, therefore, that God, above all things requires the heart. It is the conquest of the heart alone, that can extirpate those dreadful vices which are so predominant amongst the peasantry, such as drunkenness, blasphemy, lewdness, envy and theft. JESUS CHRIST would become the universal and peaceful sovereign, and the face of the church would be wholly renewed.

The decay of internal piety is unquestionably the source of the various errors that have arisen in the church; all which would speedily be sapped and overthrown, was inward religion to be re-established. Errors are only so far prejudicial to the soul, as they tend to weaken faith, and deter from prayer, and if, instead of engaging our wandering brethren in vain disputes, we could but teach them simply to believe, and diligently to pray, we should lead them sweetly unto Goo.

O how inexpressibly great is the loss sustained by mankind from the neglect of the interior? And how tremendous must the great day of retribution be to those who are entrusted with the care of souls, for not having discovered and dispensed to

their flock this hidden manna.

Some excuse themselves by saying, that this is a dangerous way; pleading the incapacity of simple persons to comprehend spiritual matters. But the Oracles of Truth affirm the contrary: "The Lord loveth those who walk simply." (Prov. xii. 22. vulg.) And where can be the danger of walking in " the only true way," which is JESUS CHRIST? of giving ourselves up to him, fixing our eye continually on him, placing all our confidence in his grace, and tending with all the

strength of our soul to his pure Love?

The simple ones, so far from being incapable of this perfection, are by their docility, innoceasey, and immility, peculiarly adapted and qualified for its attainment; and as they are not accustomed to reasoning, they are less employed in speculations, less tenacious of their own opinions. Even from their want of learning, they submit more freely to the teachings of the Divine Spirit; whereas others, who are blinded by self-sufficiency and enslaved by prejudice, give great resistance to the operations of Grace.

We are told in Scripture, "that unto the simple, Goo giveth "the understanding of his law;" (Psalm exviii. 130. vulgate.) and we are also assured, that Gon loveth to communicate with them: "The Lord careth for the Simple; I was reduced to "extremity and he saved me." (Psalm xeiv. 6. vulgate.) To warn Spiritual Fathers against preventing the little ones from coming to Christ, he himself said to his Apostles, "Suffer "little children to come unto me, for of such is the kingdom of Heaven." (Matt. xix. 14.) It was the endeavour of the Apostles to prevent children from going to our Lord, which occasioned this gracious charge. Man frequently applies a remedy to the outward body, whilst the disease lies at the heart.

The cause of our being so unsuccessful in reforming mankind, especially those of the lower class, is our beginning with external matters; all our labours in this field, do but produce such fruit as endures not: but if the key of the interior be first given, the exterior would be naturally and easily reformed. To teach man to seek Gop in his heart, to think of him, to return to him whenever he finds he has wandered from him, and to do and to suffer all things with a single eye to please him, is the natural and ready process; it is leading the soul to the very source of Grace, wherein is to be found all that is neces-

sary for sanctification.

I, therefore, conjure you all, O ye who have the care of souls, to put them at once into this way, which is Jesus Christ; nay, it is he himself that conjures you, by the precious blood he hath shed for those entrusted to you, "to "speak to the heart of Jerusalem." (Isa. xl. 2. vulgate.) O ye Dispensers of his Grace, ye Preachers of his Word, ye Ministers of his Sacraments, establish his kingdom!—and that it may indeed be established, make him Ruler over the hearts of his subjects! For as it is the heart alone that can oppose his Sovereignty, it is by the subjection of the heart that his Sovereignty is most highly exalted: "Give glory to the holiness of "God, and he shall become your sanctification." (Isa. viii. 13. vulgate.) Compose catechisms particularly to teach prayer, not by reasoning nor by method, for the simple are incapable thereof;

" cannot

thereof; but to teach the prayer of the heart, not of the understanding; the prayer of God's Spirit, not of man's invention.

Alas! by wanting them to pray in elaborate forms, and to be curiously critical therein, you create their chief obstacles. The children have been led astray from the best of Fathers, by your endeavouring to teach them too refined, too polished a language. Go then, ye poor children, to your heavenly Father, speak to him in your natural language; and though it be ever so rude and barbarous in the opinion of men, it is not so to him. A Father is much better pleased with an address which love and respect in the child throws into disorder, because he knows it proceeds from the heart, than by a formal barren harangue, though ever so elaborate in the composition. The simple and undisguised emotions of filial love are infinitely more expressive than all language, and all reasoning.

By forming instructions how to love by rule and method The Essential Love, men have in a great measure estranged themselves from him. O how unnecessary is it to teach an art of loving! The language of Love, though natural to the lover, is nonsense and barbarism to him that leveth not. The best way to learn the love of God, is to Love HIM. The ignorant and simple, because they proceed with more cordiality and simplicity, often become most perfect therein. The Spirit of Gon needs none of our arrangements and methods; when it pleaseth him, he turns Shepherds into Prophets: and, so far from excluding any from the Temple of Prayer, he throws wide the gates, that all may enter in; while Wisdom cries aloud in the highways, "Whoso is simple let him turn in hither;" (Prov. ix. 4.) and to the Fools she saith, " Come, eat of my bread " and drink of the wine which I have mingled." (Prov. ix. 5.) And doth not JESUS CHRIST himself thank his Father, for having "hid the secrets of his kingdom from the wise and " prudent, and revealed them unto Babes." (Matt. xi. 25.)

CHAP. XXIV.

OF THE MOST CERTAIN METHOD TO ATTAIN DIVINE UNION.

IT is impossible to attain Divine Union, solely by the activity of meditation, or by the meltings of the affections, or even by the highest degree of luminous and distinctly-comprehended prayer. There are many reasons for this, the chief of which are as follow:

First, According to Scripture, "no man shall see Gop and "live." (Exod. xxxiii. 20.) Now all the exercises of discursive prayer, and even of active contemplation, while esteemed as the summit and end of the passive, and not merely as a preparative to it, are still "living exercises, by which we

state incapable of farther purification. The Goldsmith now no longer discovers any adultrate mixture; its purity is perfect. its simplicity complete. The fire no longer touches it; and were it to remain an age in the furnace, its purity would not be increased, nor its substance diminished. Then it is fit for the most exquisite workmanship: and if, thereafter, this gold seems obscured or defiled, it is no more than accidental defilement, contracted by its contiguity to some impure body; but this is only superficial, and widely different from its former impurity, which was hidden in the very centre and ground of its nature, and as it were identified with it. Those, however, who are ignorant of this process, and its blessed effects. would be apt to despise and reject the vessel of pure gold. sullied by some external pollution; and prefer an impure and gross metal, that appeared superficially bright and polished. Farther, the Goldsmith never mingles together the pure and the impure gold, lest the dross of the one should corrupt the other: before they can be united they must be equally refined: he, therefore, plunges the impure metal into the furnace, till all its dross is purged away, and it becomes fully prepared for incorporation and union with the pure gold.

This is what St. Paul means, when he declares, that "the "fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is:" (Cor. iii. 13) he adds, "If any man's work be burnt, he shall suffer "loss, but he himself shall be saved, yet so as by fire." (15th verse). He here intimates, that there are a species of works so degraded by impure mixtures, that though the mercy of God accepts them, yet they must pass through the fire, to be purged from the contamination of Propriety and Self; and it is in this sense, that GoD is said "to examine and "judge our righteousness," (Psal. xiv. 3. vulg.) because that "by the deeds of the law, there shall no flesh be justified; "but by the righteousness of GoD, which is by Faith in "Jesus Christ." (Rom. iii. 20, &c.)

Thus we may see that the Divine Justice and Wisdom, as an unremitting fire, must devour and destroy all that is earthly, sensual and carnal, and all self-activity, before the soul can be fitted for and capable of union with God. Now, this purification can never be accomplished by the industry of fallen man; on the contrary he submits to it always with reluctance; he is so enamoured of self-hood, and so averse to its destruction, that did not God act upon him powerfully and with authority he would for ever resist.

It may perhaps, be objected here, that God never robs man of his free will, he can always resist the Divine Operations; and that, I therefore err, in saying God acts thus absolutely, and without the consent of man.

Let, me, however, explain myself. By man's giving a passive consent, God, without usurpation, may assume a full

power and intire guidance; for having, in the beginning of his conversion, made an unreserved surrender of himself, to all that God wills of him or by him, he thereby gave an active consent to whatsoever God thereafter might operate or require. But when God begins to burn, destroy, and purify, then the soul not perceiving the salutary designs of these operations, shrinks from them; and as the gold seems rather to blacken than brighten when first put into the furnace, so she conceives that her purity is lost, and that her temptations are her sins; insomuch, that if an active and explicit consent were then requisite, the soul could scarcely give it, nay often would withhold it. The utmost she can do is to remain firm in her passive disposition, enduring as well as she is able all these Divine Operations, which she neither can nor will obstruct.

In this manner, therefore, the soul is purified from all her proper, distinct, perceptible and multiplied operations, which constitute the great dissimilitude between her and God: she is rendered, by degrees, conform*, and then uniform; and the passive capacity of the creature is elevated, ennobled and enlarged, though in a secret and hidden manner, and therefore called mystical; but, in all these operations, the soul must concur passively. It is true, indeed, that, at the beginning of her purification, her activity is requisite; from which, as the Divine Operations become stronger and stronger, she must gradually cease: yielding herself up to the impulses of the Divine Spirit, till she is wholly absorbed in him. But this is

often a difficult and tedious process.

We do not then say, as some have falsely supposed, that there is no need of action in the process of Divine Purification: on the contrary, we affirm it as the gate; at which, however, we would not have those stop, who are to attain ultimate perfection, which is impracticable, unless the first helps are laid aside; for however necessary they may have been at the entrance of the road, they become afterwards mere clost, and greatly detrimental to those who adhere to them, preventing them from ever arriving at the end of their course. This made St. Paul say, "Forgetting those things which are been hind, and reaching forth to those which are before, I press toward the mark, for the prize of the high calling in Chassa." (Phil. iii. 18.)

Would you not say that he had lost his senses, who having undertaken an important journey, should fix his abode at the first inn, because he had been told that many travallers, who had come that way, had lodged in the house and made it their place of residence? All that we should wish then is, that souls should "press toward the mark," should pursue their journey, and take the shortest and easiest road; not stopping

^{*} Conform, by passivity and resignation; and uniform, by "no longer living herself, but by Christ living, moving, and acting in her. (Gal. ii. 20.)

at the first stage, but following the counsel and example of St. Paul, suffer themselves to be guided and governed by the Spirit of Grace, which would infallibly conduct them to the end of their creation, the enjoyment of God. But while we confess, that the enjoyment of God is the end for which alone we were created; that, "without holiness," none can attain it, and that to attain it we must necessarily pass through a severe and purifying process; how strange is it, that we should dread and avoid this process, as if that could be the cause of evil and imperfection in the present life, which is to be productive of glory and blessedness in the life to come!

None can be ignorant that God is the Supreme Good; that essential blessedness consists in Union with him; that the saints are more or less glorified, according as the Union is more or less advanced *; and that the soul cannot attain this Union by the mere activity of its own powers: for God communicates himself to the soul, in proportion as its passive capacity is great, noble, and extensive; it cannot be united to God, but in simplicity and passivity, and as this Union is beatitude itself, the way to it in simplicity and passivity, instead of being evil, must be good, must be most free from delusion

and danger, the safest, the surest and the best.

Would Jesus Chester have made this the most perfect and necessary way, had there been evil or danger therein? No! All can travel this road to blessedness; and all are called thereto, as to the enjoyment of God, which alone is beatitude, both in this world and the next. I say the enjoyment of God himself and not his gifts; which, as they do not constitute essential beatitude, cannot fully content the immortal spirit: the soul is so noble, so great, that the most exalted gifts of God cannot fill its immense capacity with happiness, unless the Giver also bestows himself. Now the whole desire of the Divine Being is to give himself to every creature, according to the capacity with which it is endued; and yet, alas! how reluctant man suffers himself to be drawn to God! How fearful is he to prepare for Divine Union!

Some say, that we should not attempt, by our own ability, to place ourselves in this state. I grant it: but what a poor subterfuge is this? since I have all along asserted and proved, that the utmost exertion of the highest created being could never accomplish this of itself; it is God alone must do it. The creature may, indeed, open the window; but it is the

sun himself, that must give the light.

The same persons say again, that some may feign to attain this blessed state; but, alas! none can any more feign this, than the wretch, who is on the point of perishing with hunger,

Psalm lxxxvi. 10. xlvi. 10. Zech. ii. 13.

can for a length of time feign to be full and satisfied; some wish or word, some sigh or sign, will inevitably escape him, and betray his famished state.

Since then none can attain this blessed state, save those whom God himself leads and places therein; we do not pretend to introduce any into it, but only to point out the shortest and safest road that leads to it: beseeching ye not to be retarded in your progress by any external exercises, not to sit down a resident at the first inn, nor to be satisfied with the sweets which are tasted in the milk for babes. If the water of eternal life is shown to some thirsty souls, how inexpressibly cruel would it be, by confining them to a round of external forms, to prevent their approaching it: so that their longing shall never be satisfied, but they shall perish with thirst.

Let us all agree in the way, as we all agree in the end, which is evident and incontrovertible. The way has its beginning, progress, and end; and the nearer we approach the end, the farther is the beginning behind us: it is only by proceeding from one, that we can arrive at the other. Would you get from the entrance to the distant end of the road, without passing over the intermediate space? and surely, if the end is good, holy, and necessary, and the entrance also good, can that be condemnable, as evil, which is the necessary passage, the direct road leading from the one to the other?

O ye blind and foolish men, who pride yourselves on science, wisdom, wit, and power, how well do you verify what God bath said, that "His secrets are hidden from the great" and wise, and revealed unto The Little Ones—The Babes!"



FRENCH EDITOR'S REMARKS

ON THE LIFE OF

LADY GUION.

" JF to any, the state of long-continued probation she underwent seem strange, it is for " want of duly observing what St. PAUL says of "JESUS CHRIST himself. For it became him, for " whom are all things, and by whom are all things, " in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the " captain of their salvation perfect through suffer-"ings; Heb. xi. 10. The same Apostle farther "assures us, that souls which God had chosen, " He also did predestinate to be conformed to "the image of his Son. Rom. viii. 9. This pri-"vation, by which she was purified and prepared " for service, ought therefore not to astonish " such readers as have never heard of any thing " like it. It was the same in substance which " was experienced by the great Patriarchs, Job "and David, and by many other enlightened " souls, the memory of whose sanctity is had in "honour at this day. It is a state consummated "by the sacrifice of eternal salvation, or a con-" sent to continue for ever, if God pleases so to " direct it, and for his glory, in this same state of "rigorous privation, which so many saints have "undergone; and wherein they would rathe chuse, "of private life, and with all those they con"verse with, the same things which generally
"prove subjects and sources of dissentions and
"debates, of hostility and hatred, of wars and
"every sort of evils temporal, and often eternal,
"would be changed into means of improvement
in goodness, into spiritual succours, into
"schools to make us become saints, and like
angels in purity, innocence, goodness and
charity. They would render us true disciples
and imitators of Jesus Christ. And indeed,
without this no man is his, but in imagination;
nor a christian but in name.

"Formerly, to purify the Christians, God * made use of the hatred and persecutions of "the idolatrous pagans, who by their torments " and their fires purified them like gold in the "furnace. Now, since there are no more pagans "for that purpose, it pleases God, in order to es purify souls, to make use of the daily conduct. "the humours and vexations of those one lives "with, relations, friends, acquaintance and " neighbours. If we received their manner of " beliaving to us, as Christians, and according to the intention of God, it would render us "true saints, and procure us a peace unalterable "and eternal, as appears in this sanctified soul, "which gives us to see here that she derived "those good effects by this way, which is with-"out doubt a part of the daily cross, which "JESUS CHRIST says, we must bear, if we will "come after him, and accompany him both in " this world and the other."

A DISCOURSE

OP

DOCTOR TAULERUS,

WITH

A BEGGAR.

GREAT Divine prayed to God, during the space of eight years, that he would be graciously pleased to direct him to a man who might teach him the true way to heaven. It was said to him at length, "Go to such a church "porch, and there thou shalt find a man, who "will instruct thee in the spiritual life." Accordingly he went, and found a poor beggar very meanly clad. He saluted him in these words, "God give you a good day, my friend." The poor man answered, "Sir, I do not remember that I ever had an evil day." The Doctor said to him "God give you a good and happy "life," Why say you that?" replied the Beggar; "I never was unhappy." "God bless you, my "friend," said the Doctor, "pray tell me what "you mean." He replied, "That I shall willingly "do. I told you first, I never had an evil day; "for when I have hunger, I praise God; if it "rain, hail, snow or freeze, be it fair or foul: " or if I am despised or ill-used, I return God "thanks; so I never had an ill day: Nor have I "ever been unhappy, since I have learned always "to resign myself to his will, being very certain " of this, that all his works are perfectly good: "And therefore I never desire any thing else "but the good pleasure of God." Then said the Doctor, "But what if the good pleasure of God " should be to cast you hence into hell?" "If he

"would do so," replied the other, "I have two arms to embrace him with; the one whereof is profound humility, by which I am united to his holy humanity; the other is love or charity, which joins me to his divinity. Embraced with these two arms he would descend with me thither, if thither he ordered me: And there I had infinitely rather be with him, than in paradise without him." Hereby the doctor learned that a true resignation to the divine will, accompanied with profound humility of heart, is the shortest way to attain God's love.

After that, he asked him again from whence be came. The poor man answered God sent him. The doctor enquired of him where he found God. He replied, " I found him when I had renounced "all the creatures." "And where did you leave "him?" said the Doctor. He replied, "With "the poor in spirit, the pure in heart, and men "of charity. "But who are you?" says the "divine. "I am a king," says the beggar. "Where is your kingdom?" says the former. "In my soul," says the latter: "I have learned "to bring into subjection, and to govern my "senses, as well outward as inward, with my " affections and passions, which kingdom is "undoubtedly superior to all the kingdoms of "this world." The doctor then asked him by what means he had attained to such perfection. He answered, "By silence, vigilance, medita-"tion, prayer, and the union I had with God. "I could find no sure repose or comfort, in any "creature of the world; by means whereof I "found out my God, who will comfort me " world without end"-Amen.

THE END.

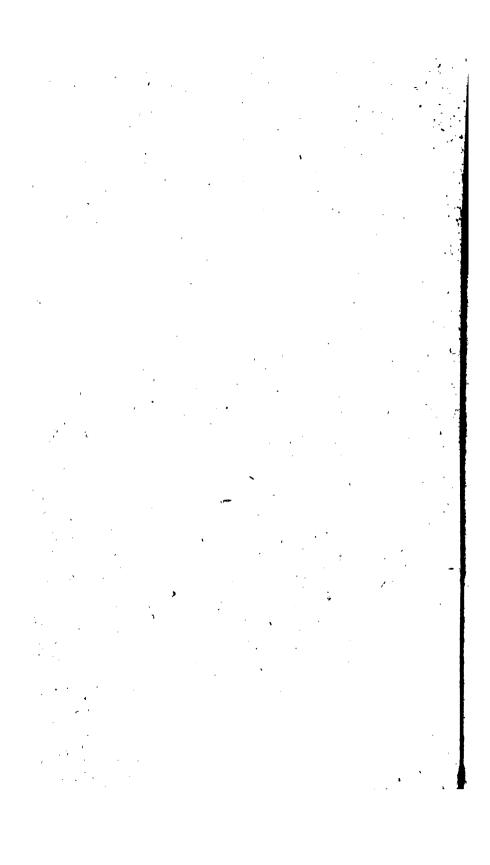
ς.

,

.

!)

:



~



